

1	<i>Chapter 31</i>	1
2		2
3	COORDINATION AND LOCK-IN: COMPETITION WITH	3
4	SWITCHING COSTS AND NETWORK EFFECTS	4
5		5
6	JOSEPH FARRELL	6
7	<i>University of California</i>	7
8	<i>e-mail: farrell@econ.berkeley.edu</i>	8
9		9
10	PAUL KLEMPERER	10
11	<i>Nuffield College, Oxford University</i>	11
12	<i>e-mail: paul.klemperer@economics.ox.ac.uk</i>	12
13		13
14	Contents	14
15		15
16	Abstract	1970
17	Keywords	1970
18	1. Introduction	1971
19	1.1. Switching costs	1972
20	1.2. Network effects	1974
21	1.3. Strategy and policy	1976
22	2. Switching costs and competition	1977
23	2.1. Introduction	1977
24	2.2. Empirical evidence	1980
25	2.3. Firms who cannot commit to future prices	1981
26	2.3.1. Bargains followed by ripoffs	1981
27	2.3.2. Inefficiency of the price-path	1982
28	2.4. Firms who cannot discriminate between cohorts of consumers	1983
29	2.4.1. Free-entry model	1984
30	2.4.2. Do oligopolists hold simultaneous sales?, or staggered sales?, or no sales?	1984
31	2.4.3. Oligopoly dynamics	1986
32	2.4.4. The level of profits	1987
33	2.4.5. The effect of consumers' expectations on prices	1988
34	2.4.6. Collusive behavior	1990
35	2.5. Consumers who use multiple suppliers	1990
36	2.5.1. Paying consumers to switch	1991
37	2.5.2. Is there too much switching?	1993
38	2.5.3. Multiproduct firms	1994
39		39
40		40
41	<i>Handbook of Industrial Organization, Volume 3</i>	41
42	<i>Edited by M. Armstrong and R. Porter</i>	42
43	© 2007 Elsevier B.V. All rights reserved	43
	DOI: 10.1016/S1573-448X(06)03031-7	43

1	2.6. Battles for market share	1996	1
2	2.6.1. The value of market share	1996	2
3	2.6.2. Penetration pricing	1997	3
4	2.6.3. Harvesting vs investing: macroeconomic and international trade applications	1997	4
5	2.7. Entry	1998	5
6	2.7.1. Small-scale entry is (too) easy	1999	6
7	2.7.2. Large scale entry is (too) hard	1999	7
8	2.7.3. Single-product entry may be (too) hard	2000	8
9	2.7.4. Artificial switching costs make entry (too) hard	2001	9
10	2.8. Endogenous switching costs: choosing how to compete	2001	10
11	2.8.1. Reducing switching costs to enhance efficiency	2001	11
12	2.8.2. Increasing switching costs to enhance efficiency	2002	12
13	2.8.3. Increasing switching costs to enhance oligopoly power	2002	13
14	2.8.4. Reducing switching costs to enhance oligopoly power	2003	14
15	2.8.5. Increasing switching costs to prevent or exploit entry	2004	15
16	2.9. Switching costs and policy	2005	16
17	3. Network effects and competition	2007	17
18	3.1. Introduction	2007	18
19	3.2. Empirical evidence	2009	19
20	3.2.1. Case studies	2009	20
21	3.2.2. Econometric approaches	2015	21
22	3.3. Under-adoption and network externalities	2016	22
23	3.3.1. Formalities	2017	23
24	3.3.2. What are the groups?	2018	24
25	3.3.3. Total and marginal effects	2019	25
26	3.3.4. Under-adoption of a single network	2019	26
27	3.3.5. Are network effects externalities?	2020	27
28	3.4. The coordination problem	2021	28
29	3.4.1. Coordination breakdowns: mistakes, splintering, and wait-and-see	2022	29
30	3.4.2. Coordinating on the wrong equilibrium	2024	30
31	3.4.3. Cheap talk and consensus standards	2026	31
32	3.4.4. Coordination through sequential choice	2027	32
33	3.5. Inertia in adoption	2028	33
34	3.5.1. Ex post inertia	2029	34
35	3.5.2. Early power	2033	35
36	3.5.3. Positive feedback and tipping	2034	36
37	3.5.4. Option value of waiting	2035	37
38	3.6. Sponsored price and strategy for a single network	2036	38
39	3.6.1. Pricing to different groups: penetration pricing	2036	39
40	3.6.2. Single monopoly price	2037	40
41	3.6.3. Commitment strategies	2038	41
42	3.6.4. Contingent contracts	2039	42
43	3.7. Sponsored pricing of competing networks	2041	43

1	3.7.1. Competition with cost/quality differences	2041	1
2	3.7.2. Competition with cost/quality differences that vary over time	2043	2
3	3.7.3. Static competition when consumers' preferences differ	2046	3
4	3.7.4. Dynamic competition when consumers' preferences differ	2046	4
5	3.8. Endogenous network effects: choosing how to compete	2047	5
6	3.8.1. Efficiency effects	2047	6
7	3.8.2. Competitive effects	2047	7
8	3.8.3. Institutions and rules: who chooses?	2049	8
9	3.9. Network effects and policy	2052	9
10	4. Conclusion	2055	10
11	Acknowledgements	2055	11
12	References	2056	12
13			13
14			14
15			15
16			16
17			17
18			18
19			19
20			20
21			21
22			22
23			23
24			24
25			25
26			26
27			27
28			28
29			29
30			30
31			31
32			32
33			33
34			34
35			35
36			36
37			37
38			38
39			39
40			40
41			41
42			42
43			43

1 Abstract

2 Switching costs and network effects bind customers to vendors if products are incompat- 2
 3 ible, locking customers or even markets in to early choices. Lock-in hinders customers 3
 4 from changing suppliers in response to (predictable or unpredictable) changes in effi- 4
 5 ciency, and gives vendors lucrative ex post market power – over the same buyer in 5
 6 the case of switching costs (or brand loyalty), or over others with network effects. 6
 7 Firms compete ex ante for this ex post power, using penetration pricing, introductory of- 7
 8 fers, and price wars. Such “competition for the market” or “life-cycle competition” can 8
 9 adequately replace ordinary compatible competition, and can even be fiercer than com- 9
 10 patible competition by weakening differentiation. More often, however, incompatible 10
 11 competition not only involves direct efficiency losses but also softens competition and 11
 12 magnifies incumbency advantages. With network effects, established firms have little 12
 13 incentive to offer better deals when buyers’ and complementors’ expectations hinge on 13
 14 non-efficiency factors (especially history such as past market shares), and although com- 14
 15 petition between incompatible networks is initially unstable and sensitive to competitive 15
 16 offers and random events, it later “tips” to monopoly, after which entry is hard, often 16
 17 even too hard given incompatibility. And while switching costs can encourage small- 17
 18 scale entry, they discourage sellers from raiding one another’s existing customers, and 18
 19 so also discourage more aggressive entry. Because of these competitive effects, even 19
 20 inefficient incompatible competition is often more profitable than compatible compe- 20
 21 tition, especially for dominant firms with installed-base or expectational advantages. 21
 22 Thus firms probably seek incompatibility too often. We therefore favor thoughtfully 22
 23 pro-compatibility public policy. 23
 24

26 Keywords

27 Switching costs, Network effects, Lock-in, Network externalities, Co-ordination, 27
 28 Indirect network effects 28
 29

30 *JEL classification:* L130, L150, L120, L140, D430, D420 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43

1. Introduction

The economics of switching costs and network effects have received a great deal of popular, as well as professional, attention in the last two decades.¹ They are central to the “new economy” information technology industries. But these new topics are closely linked to traditional concepts of contract incompleteness, complementarity, and economies of scale and scope.

Both switching costs and proprietary network effects arise when consumers value forms of compatibility that require otherwise separate purchases to be made from the same firm. Switching costs arise if a consumer wants a group, or especially a series, of his own purchases to be compatible with one another: this creates economies of scope among his purchases from a single firm. Network effects arise when a user wants compatibility with other users so that he can interact or trade with them, or use the same complements; this creates economies of scope between different users’ purchases.

These economies of scope make a buyer’s best action depend on other, complementary transactions. When those transactions are in the future, or made simultaneously by others, his expectations about them are crucial. When they are in the past, they are history that matters to him. History also matters to a firm because established market share is a valuable asset: in the case of switching costs, it represents a stock of individually locked-in buyers, while in the case of network effects an installed base directly lets the firm offer more network benefits and may also boost expectations about future sales.

Vying for valuable share, firms may compete hard for early adoptions, notably with penetration pricing but perhaps also in less efficient ways. Early sales induce lucrative follow-on sales, which we often call locked-in, although lock-in is seldom absolute. Both switching costs and proprietary network effects thus shift the locus of competition from smaller to larger units of sales, as economies of scope, tying, and bundling do.

When switching costs are high, buyers and sellers actually trade streams of products or services, but their contracts often cover only the present. Similarly, network effects push large groups of users toward doing the same thing as one another, but contracts usually cover only a bilateral transaction between a seller and one user. If users choose sequentially, early choices constrain later buyers and create “collective switching costs”; if users choose simultaneously, they face a coordination problem. Clever contracts can solve these problems, but ordinary contracts generally do not.

Because firms compete to capture buyers, those problems are more subtle than the mere fact that buyers are locked in ex post. For example, in the simplest switching-cost models, initial sales contracts do not specify future prices, yet competition for the stream of purchases is efficient. Similarly, in some simple network models, users efficiently coordinate and network effects cause no trouble. As such models illustrate, conventional competition “in the market” can be replaced by well-functioning competition “for the

¹ Recent short (less than 2000 words each) non-technical summaries of the economics of switching costs and network effects can be found in Klemperer (in press a) and Klemperer (in press b), respectively.

market” – for a buyer’s lifecycle requirements in the case of switching costs, or for the business of many buyers when there are network effects. Early adoptions are often pivotal and competition focuses on them; later, locked-in buyers pay more and create ex post rents; but ex ante competition passes those rents through to the pivotal buyers. This can be efficient, though it raises distributional issues unless (as in simple switching cost markets) locked-in buyers were themselves previously pivotal.

But these simplest models are misleading: things do not usually work so well. Despite ex ante competition for the market, incompatibilities often reduce efficiency and harm consumers in a number of ways:

Direct costs are incurred if consumers actually switch or actually adopt incompatible products.² Consumers may avoid those costs by not switching, or by buying from the same firm, but that ties together transactions and thus often obstructs efficient buyer–seller matching. Variety may be more sustainable if niche products do not force users to sacrifice network effects or incur switching costs by being incompatible with mainstream products. Entrants lack installed bases and consumers’ expectations may naturally focus on established firms, so entry with network effects, and large-scale entry with switching costs, are hard. These entry hurdles may be broadly efficient *given* incompatibility, but they nevertheless represent a social cost of incompatibility.

Ex ante competition often fails to compete away ex post rents: switching costs typically raise oligopoly profits and proprietary network effects often do, especially if expectations fail to track relative surplus. And even when ex ante competition dissipates ex post rents, it may do so in unproductive ways such as through socially inefficient marketing; at best it induces “bargain-then-ripoff” pricing (low to attract business, high to extract surplus) that normally distorts buyers’ quantity choices, gives consumers wrong signals about whether to switch, and (in the case of network effects) provides artificial incentives to be or appear pivotal.

Thus while incompatibility does not necessarily damage competition, it often does.

1.1. *Switching costs*

A product has classic switching costs if a buyer will purchase it repeatedly and will find it costly to switch from one seller to another. Switching costs also arise if a buyer will purchase follow-on products such as service and repair, and will find it costly to switch from the supplier of the original product.

Large switching costs lock in a buyer once he makes an initial purchase, so he is effectively buying a series of goods, just as (more generally) with strong enough relationship-specific economies of scope, sellers compete on bundles of goods rather than single goods. Sometimes sellers offer complete (“life-cycle”) contracts that specify all prices. But often contracts do not specify all the future prices, so that a long-term

² Firms may also dissipate resources creating and defending incompatibility.

1 relationship is governed by short-term contracts. This pattern creates ex post monopoly, 1
2 for which firms compete ex ante.³ 2

3 Some of the same issues arise if contracts are incomplete for other reasons. For instance, 3
4 shops often advertise some, but not all, of their prices: the consumer learns others 4
5 only once he is in the shop and will find it costly to go elsewhere. Just as with dynamic 5
6 switching costs, this tends to produce ripoffs on un-advertised (small print) prices and 6
7 corresponding bargains on advertised (loss leader) prices. 7

8 The same consumer-specific economies of scope are present in “shopping-cost” mar- 8
9 kets where consumers face costs of using different suppliers for different goods in a 9
10 single period and with all prices advertised, but neither time nor commitment problems 10
11 arise. Such shopping costs encourage firms to offer a full (perhaps too broad) product 11
12 line – and so help explain multi-product firms – but can lead firms to offer similar prod- 12
13 ucts to each other so that there may be too little variety in the market as a whole. We 13
14 argue below that the shopping-cost framework is the best way to understand the “mix 14
15 and match” literature. 15

16 Switching costs shift competition away from what we normally think of as the default 16
17 (a single consumer’s needs in a single period) to something broader – a single 17
18 consumer’s needs over time. Even when that long-term relationship is governed by 18
19 short-term contracts, this shift need not cause competitive problems: competing on 19
20 first-period terms can be an adequate proxy for competition with complete contracts. 20
21 Likewise, the theory of bilateral contracts with hold-up shows that when parties cannot 21
22 readily contract on future variables and there are switching costs, it can be efficient to 22
23 accept that hold-up will occur and to compensate the prospective victim up front. But 23
24 this only works if the parties can efficiently transfer rents across periods; often, instead, 24
25 “hold up” or “bargain-then-ripoff” pricing distorts quantity choices, incentives to switch 25
26 suppliers, and entry incentives. 26

27 The bargain-then-ripoff structure is clearest when new and locked-in customers are 27
28 clearly distinguished and can be charged separate bargain and ripoff prices, respectively. 28
29 This will be the case when prices are individually negotiated (and existing customers 29
30 are known); it will also be the case when locked-in buyers buy separate “follow-on” 30
31 products such as parts and service, rather than repeatedly buying the same good. 31

32 If, however, each firm has to set a single price to old (locked-in) and new customers, 32
33 then its trade with a locked-in customer affects its trade with a new customer and 33
34 the problem is no longer bilateral. A form of bargain-then-ripoff pricing sometimes 34
35 survives, with firms engaging in repeated “sales”, but prices will often instead be a 35
36 compromise between high prices to exploit locked-in buyers and lower prices to build a 36
37 locked-in customer base. 37
38
39
40

41 ³ Williamson (1975) stressed the “fundamental transformation, in which the initial winner of a bidding 41
42 competition thereafter enjoys an advantage over rival suppliers because of its ownership of or control over 42
43 transaction specific assets”. 43

1 Whether with bargain-then-ripoff dynamics or with a single compromise price, 1
 2 switching costs may either raise or lower average oligopoly prices. The outcome de- 2
 3 pends heavily on how consumers form expectations about future prices, but on balance 3
 4 switching costs seem more likely to increase prices. Furthermore, switching costs can 4
 5 segment an otherwise undifferentiated market as firms focus on their established cus- 5
 6 tomers and do not compete aggressively for their rivals' buyers, letting oligopolists 6
 7 extract positive profits. 7

8 Switching costs also affect entry conditions, in two opposing ways. They ham- 8
 9 per forms of entry that must persuade customers to pay those costs. So in a classic 9
 10 switching-cost market they hamper large-scale entry that seeks to attract existing 10
 11 customers (for instance to achieve minimum viable scale, if the market is not growing 11
 12 quickly). Likewise, shopping costs make single-product entry hard. 12

13 On the other hand, if incumbents must set a single price to old and new buyers, a firm 13
 14 with a larger customer base puts relatively more weight on harvesting this base than 14
 15 on winning new customers. Thus switching costs create a fat-cat effect that actually 15
 16 encourages entry that focuses purely on new customers, and makes competition sta- 16
 17 ble: large shares tend to shrink and small shares to grow. More generally, the tradeoff 17
 18 between harvesting and investing depends on interest rates, the state of the business cy- 18
 19 cle, expectations about exchange-rates, etc., with implications for macroeconomics and 19
 20 international trade. 20
 21

22 1.2. Network effects 22

23 A good exhibits *direct* network effects if adoption by different users is complementary, 23
 24 so that each user's adoption payoff, and his incentive to adopt, increases as more others 24
 25 adopt. Thus users of a communications network or speakers of a language gain directly 25
 26 when others adopt it, because they have more opportunities for (beneficial) interactions 26
 27 with peers. 27
 28

29 *Indirect* network effects arise through improved opportunities to trade with the other 29
 30 side of a market. Although buyers typically dislike being joined by other buyers because 30
 31 it raises price given the number of sellers, they also like it because it attracts more 31
 32 sellers. If thicker markets are more efficient, then buyers' indirect gain from the re- 32
 33 equilibrating entry by sellers can outweigh the terms-of-trade loss for buyers, and vice 33
 34 versa; if so, there is an indirect network effect. 34
 35

36 From a cooperative game theory perspective, network effects are just economies of 36
 37 scale: the per-buyer surplus available to a coalition of buyers and a seller increases with 37
 38 the size of the coalition.⁴ But the contracting and coordination issues seem much harder. 38
 39
 40

41 ⁴ The analogy becomes weaker if network effects are less anonymous. Likewise, switching costs correspond 41
 42 to economies of scope on the production side in a single-consumer context, but the analogy is imperfect with 42
 43 many consumers because individual customer-supplier matches matter in switching-cost markets. 43

1 Unless adoption prices fully internalize the network effect (which is difficult), there 1
2 is a positive externality from adoption, and a single network product tends to be under- 2
3 adopted at the margin. But when one network competes with another, adopting one 3
4 network means not adopting another; this dilutes or overturns that externality. 4

5 More interestingly, network effects create incentives to “herd” with others. Self- 5
6 fulfilling expectations create multiple equilibria and cause chicken-and-egg or critical- 6
7 mass behavior with positive feedback or “tipping”: a network that looks like succeeding 7
8 will as a result do so. 8

9 How adopters form expectations and coordinate their choices dramatically affects the 9
10 performance of competition among networks. If adopters smoothly coordinate on the 10
11 best deal, vendors face strong pressure to offer such deals. Indeed, competition may be 11
12 unusually fierce because all-or-nothing competition neutralizes horizontal differentia- 12
13 tion – since adopters focus not on matching a product to their own tastes but on joining 13
14 the expected winner. 14

15 Smooth coordination is hard, especially when different adopters would prefer differ- 15
16 ent coordinated outcomes, as in the Battle of the Sexes, perhaps because each has a 16
17 history with a different network and faces individual switching costs. However, some 17
18 institutions can help. Consensus standard setting (informally or through standards orga- 18
19 nizations) can help avert “splintering”; contingent contracts seem theoretically promis- 19
20 ing but little used; and – most important – adoption is very often sequential. If one trusts 20
21 long chains of backward induction, fully sequential adoption eliminates the starkest co- 21
22 ordination traps, in which an alternative equilibrium would be strictly better for all. 22

23 However, sequential adoption may not help overall efficiency in the Battle-of-the- 23
24 Sexes case. Sequential adoption translates multiple static (simultaneous-adoption) equi- 24
25 libria into the adoption dynamics characteristic of network markets: *early instability* 25
26 *and later lock-in*. In particular, sequential adoption implements tradeoffs between early 26
27 and late efficiencies that are not generally efficient. Because early adoptions affect later 27
28 ones, long-term behavior is driven by early events, whether accidental or strategic. Thus 28
29 early adopters’ preferences count for more than later adopters’: “excess early power”. 29

30 These adoption dynamics are the essence of competition if each network is compet- 30
31 itively supplied, and the playing field for competition if each network is proprietary to 31
32 one “sponsor”. Sponsors compete *ex ante*, in particular with penetration pricing, and 32
33 perhaps also using other tactics such as pronouncements, to appeal to the pivotal early 33
34 adopters, since the *ex post* lock-in creates *ex post* dominance and profits. This competi- 34
35 tion for the market can neutralize or overturn excess early power if sponsors’ anticipated 35
36 later relative efficiency feeds through into their early willingness to set low penetration 36
37 prices. But where that feed-through is obstructed or asymmetric, networks that appeal 37
38 to early pivotal customers thrive, while late developers have a hard time. Much has been 38
39 written on whether incompatible transitions are even harder than they should be, given 39
40 *ex-post* incompatibility, but whether there is such “excess inertia” or its opposite, “ex- 40
41 cess momentum”, long-term choices still hinge mainly on early preferences and early 41
42 information. In Section 3.2 below, we illustrate these themes in the famous case of the 42
43 QWERTY keyboard. 43

1 If such incompatible competition does not tip all the way to one network, it sacrifices 1
2 network benefits and may segment the market; if it does tip, it sacrifices matching of 2
3 products to customers or to time periods and loses the option value from the possibility 3
4 that a currently inferior technology might become superior. Moreover, if adopters do 4
5 not coordinate well, or coordinate using cues – such as history – other than the sur- 5
6 pluses firms offer, the direct loss in performance is exacerbated by vendors' weaker 6
7 incentive to offer good deals. For example, if one firm clearly has the *ability* to offer 7
8 the highest quality, so buyers know it could profitably recapture the market even after 8
9 losing any one cohort's business, they may quite rationally all buy from it even if it 9
10 never actually produces high quality or offers a low price. Finally, the excess power 10
11 of early adopters biases outcomes towards networks that are more efficient early on, 11
12 when unsponsored networks compete; biases outcomes in favor of sponsored over 12
13 sponsored alternatives; and often biases the outcome even when both alternatives are 13
14 sponsored. 14

15 If firms choose to compete with compatible products, then consumers obtain full net- 15
16 work benefits even when they do not all buy from the same firm. This raises consumers' 16
17 willingness to pay, which can persuade firms to make their products compatible. But, 17
18 as with switching costs, compatibility often sharpens competition and neutralizes the 18
19 competitive advantage of a large installed base; furthermore, while switching costs tend 19
20 to soften competition, hindering attempts to lure customers from rivals (though they 20
21 may facilitate small-scale entry, they also encourage entry to stay small), proprietary 21
22 network effects tend to make competition all-or-nothing, with risks of exclusion. Thus 22
23 large firms and those who are good at steering adopters' expectations may prefer their 23
24 products to be incompatible with rivals'. If others favor compatibility, this can lead to 24
25 complex maneuvering, but intellectual property can help firms insist on incompatibility. 25
26

27 1.3. *Strategy and policy* 27

28
29 Switching costs and proprietary network effects imply complementarities that in turn 29
30 make success selling in one period or to one customer an advantage in another. This 30
31 central fact has important implications for competitive strategy and for public policy. 31

32 For a firm, it makes market share a valuable asset, and encourages a competitive focus 32
33 on affecting expectations and on signing up pivotal (notably early) customers, which is 33
34 reflected in strategies such as penetration pricing; competition is shifted from textbook 34
35 competition in the market to a form of Schumpeterian competition for the market in 35
36 which firms struggle for dominance. 36

37 For a consumer, it may make early choices tantamount to long-term commitments – 37
38 necessitating great care and raising the value of accurate information at that stage; it 38
39 may make those choices a coordination problem with other adopters, or it may mean 39
40 that there is no real choice because of what others have done or are expected to do. 40

41 And for policy, these facts collectively have broad repercussions. Because early 41
42 choices are crucial, consumer protection (against deception, etc.) and information can 42
43 be key; because coordination is often important and difficult, institutions such as stan- 43

1 dards organizations matter. Finally, because competition for the market differs greatly 1
2 from competition in the market, competition policy gets involved in issues of compat- 2
3 ibility, as well as in the analysis of mergers, monopolization, intellectual property, and 3
4 predation, all of which behave differently in the presence of switching costs and network 4
5 effects. 5
6 6
7 7

8 **2. Switching costs and competition** 8

9 *2.1. Introduction* 9

10 A consumer faces a *switching cost* between sellers when an investment specific to his 10
11 current seller must be duplicated for a new seller.⁵ That investment might be in equip- 11
12 ment, in setting up a relationship, in learning how to use a product, or in buying a 12
13 high-priced first unit that then allows one to buy subsequent units more cheaply (when 13
14 firms' prices are non-linear). Switching costs may be psychological.⁶ Klemperer (1995) 14
15 gives many examples of each of these kinds of switching costs, and Section 2.2 dis- 15
16 cusses empirical evidence for switching costs. 16
17 17
18 18

19 Switching costs may be *learning* costs, in which case a consumer who switches from 19
20 firm A to firm B has no switching cost of later buying from either firm. Alternatively, 20
21 switching costs may be *transactional*, in which case a consumer who switches from A 21
22 to B would incur an additional switching cost if he reswitched back to A (an example 22
23 is the cost of returning rented equipment and renting from a new supplier). Of course, 23
24 many switching costs have both learning and transactional aspects. 24

25 We will generally assume that switching costs are real social costs, but there can also 25
26 be *contractual* or pecuniary switching costs (that are not social costs). Examples include 26
27 airlines' "frequent-flyer" programs, and "loyalty contracts" that rebate a fraction of past 27
28 payments to consumers who continue to patronize the firm. These pecuniary switching 28
29 costs are a form of quantity discount or bundling. Lars Stole (2007) discusses such price 29
30 discrimination strategies elsewhere in this Volume, so we will focus mainly on "real" 30
31 switching costs.⁷ 31
32 32
33 33

34 ⁵ There can also be switching costs among different products of a single firm, as there were among IBM 34
35 computers until the internally compatible System/360 family. But we (following the economics literature) 35
36 focus on switching costs between firms. 36

37 ⁶ Social psychologists have shown that consumers change their own preferences in favor of products that 37
38 they have previously chosen or been given, in order to reduce "cognitive dissonance" [Brehm (1956)]. 38

39 ⁷ Typically, a consumer who has not previously bought from any firm incurs a start-up cost similar to (or 39
40 greater than) the new investment (switching cost) that a brand switcher must make. We will use the term 39
41 "switching cost" to include these start-up costs. So a consumer may have a "switching cost" of making a 40
42 first purchase. In many models consumers have high enough willingnesses to pay that this cost has little 41
43 consequence since it does not affect consumers' preferences between firms. 42

42 Sometimes costs of forming a new relationship fall upon the supplier, not (or as well as) on the customer, and 42
43 firms' costs of serving new customers have parallels to consumers' switching costs [see Klemperer (1995)]. 43

1 We assume consumers have perfect information about the existence and qualities of 1
 2 all firms' products, even before purchasing any. So "new" consumers who have not yet 2
 3 developed an attachment to any particular product are especially important in markets 3
 4 with switching costs. In contrast, "search costs" directly affect even consumers' initial 4
 5 purchases. But search costs and switching costs have much in common, and models of 5
 6 the effects of switching costs can also apply to search costs. For example, either kind 6
 7 of friction makes a firm's market share important for its future profitability (see Section 7
 8 2.6) and much empirical work does not distinguish between search and switching 8
 9 costs.⁸ For a survey of search costs, see, for example, *Stiglitz (1989)* in Volume 1 of this 9
 10 Series. 10

11 "Experience-good" markets in which each consumer needs to purchase a product to 11
 12 determine its quality [see *Nelson (1970)*] and so prefers to repurchase a brand he tried 12
 13 and liked rather than try a new brand of unknown quality, also have much in common 13
 14 with switching-cost markets. But with experience goods, unlike with switching costs, 14
 15 complications can arise from the possibility of prices signaling qualities, and from the 15
 16 existence of consumers who disliked the product they last purchased.^{9,10} 16

17 Switching costs not only apply to repeat-purchases of identical goods. An important 17
 18 class of examples involves "follow on" goods, such as spare parts and repair services, 18
 19 bought in "aftermarkets": buyers face additional "switching" costs if the follow-on 19
 20 goods are not compatible with the original purchase, as may be the case if they are 20
 21 not bought from the same firm.¹¹ 21
 22 22

23 Firms' switching costs have been less studied, but in some contexts, such as the simple model of the next 23
 24 subsection, the total prices (including any switching costs) paid by consumers are unaffected by whether 24
 25 firms or consumers actually pay the switching costs. Thus the equilibrium incidence need not coincide with 25
 26 the apparent incidence of switching costs. 26

27 ⁸ For example, empirical findings about the credit card [*Ausubel (1991)*, etc. – see footnote 66] and telecom- 27
 28 munications [see, e.g., *Knittel (1997)*] markets, and about the effects of firms' discount rates on prices [*Froot* 28
 29 *and Klemperer (1989)*, *Chevalier and Scharfstein (1996)*, *Fitoussi and Phelps (1988)*, etc.] could be the result 29
 30 of either switching or search costs. On the other hand, *Moshkin and Shachar (2000)* develop a discrete-choice 30
 31 empirical model to estimate how many consumers behave as if they have switching costs and search costs, 31
 32 respectively. Their test is based on the fact that whereas the switching probability of a consumer facing search 32
 33 costs depends on the match between his tastes and the attributes of the alternative he last chose, the switching 33
 34 probability of a consumer facing switching costs depends on the match between his tastes and the attributes 34
 35 of all available alternatives. Using panel data on television viewing choices, they suggest 72% of viewers act 35
 36 as if they have switching costs between TV channels, while 28% act as if they have search costs. See also 36
 37 *Wilson (2006)*. 37

38 ⁹ *Schmalensee (1982)* and *Villas Boas (2006)* analyse models of experience goods that show similarities to 38
 39 switching costs models. *Hakenes and Peitz (in press)* and *Doganoglu (2004)* model experience goods when 39
 40 there are also learning or transactional switching costs; *Doganoglu* shows that adding small switching costs 40
 41 to *Villas Boas' (2006)* model can sometimes reduce price levels. 41

42 ¹⁰ For related models in which consumers differ in their "quality" from firms' point of view, and firms are 42
 43 uncertain about consumers they have not supplied and can exploit those they know to be of "high quality", 43
 44 see, for example, *Nilssen (2000)* and *Cohen (2005)* on insurance markets and *Sharpe (1990)* and *Zephyrin* 44
 45 *(1994)* on bank loan markets. 45

46 ¹¹ Aftermarkets have been much studied since a US Supreme Court decision (*ITS v. Kodak*) held that it was 46
 47 conceptually possible for ITS, an independent repair firm, to prove that Kodak had illegally monopolized the 47
 48 48

1 Similar issues arise when retailers each advertise the prices of only some of their 1
 2 products (often the “loss leaders”), but expect consumers who enter their stores to 2
 3 buy other products also.¹² See, for example, Lal and Matutes (1994) and Lee and Png 3
 4 (2004). In these models, consumers decide whether or not to buy the advertised goods 4
 5 before entering a store, that is, consumers are making purchase decisions about the ad- 5
 6 vertised goods and the unadvertised (“follow-on”) products in different “periods”.¹³ 6

7 If all prices are advertised, consumers may incur switching costs, or “shopping costs”, 7
 8 at a single date by choosing to buy related products from multiple suppliers rather than 8
 9 from a single supplier. In this case a static (single-period) model is appropriate. (These 9
 10 “shopping costs” can be real social costs or contractual costs created by quantity dis- 10
 11 counts and bundling.) 11

12 Either in a static context, or in a dynamic context when firms can commit to future 12
 13 prices and qualities, a market with switching costs is closely analogous to a market with 13
 14 economies of scope in production; with switching costs each individual consumer can 14
 15 be viewed as a market with economies of scope between “purchases now” and “pur- 15
 16 chases later”. Just as a market with large production economies of scope is entirely 16
 17 captured by the firm with the lowest total costs in the simplest price-competition model, 17
 18 so in a simple model with complete contracts each individual buyer’s lifetime require- 18
 19 ments in a market with large switching costs are filled by the lowest-cost supplier of 19
 20 those requirements. That is, firms compete on “lifecycle” prices and the market lifecy- 20
 21 cle price is determined by lifecycle costs, with any subdivision of the lifecycle price 21
 22 being arbitrary and meaningless. In this case, the outcome is efficient and switching 22
 23 costs confer no market power on firms. 23

24 However, most of the literature focuses on dynamic problems and emphasizes the 24
 25 resulting commitment problems. The simple analogy in the paragraph above – includ- 25
 26 ing the efficiency of the outcome – *can* survive even if firms cannot credibly commit 26
 27 to future prices or qualities. But even small steps outside the simplest story suggest 27
 28 ways in which the analogy and the efficiency break down (Section 2.3). The analogy is 28
 29 still weaker if firms cannot discriminate between different customers (Section 2.4), or 29
 30 consumers use multiple suppliers (Section 2.5). After treating these cases (and having 30
 31 discussed empirical evidence in Section 2.2), we analyze the “market share” competi- 31
 32 tion that switching costs generate (Section 2.6). All this discussion takes both the 32
 33 switching costs and the number of firms as exogenous, so we then consider entry (Sec- 33
 34 tion 2.7) and endogenous switching costs (Section 2.8), before addressing implications 34
 35 for competition policy (Section 2.9). 35
 36 36
 37 37
 38 38
 39 39

40 aftermarket for servicing Kodak photocopiers: see, e.g., Shapiro (1995), Shapiro and Teece (1994), MacKie- 40
 41 Mason and Metzler (1999), and Borenstein, MacKie-Mason and Netz (1995, 2000).

41 ¹² If the unadvertised follow-on product is always purchased, it can be interpreted as the “quality” of the 41
 42 advertised product – see Ellison (2005) and Vickers (2003). 42

43 ¹³ Gabaix and Laibson (2006) analyse this case when only some consumers are rational. 43

2.2. Empirical evidence

The empirical literature on switching costs is much smaller and more recent than the theoretical literature.^{14,15} Some studies test specific aspects of the theory (see later sections), but only a few studies directly attempt to measure switching costs.

Where micro data on individual consumers' purchases are available, a discrete choice approach can be used to explore the determinants of a consumer's probability of purchasing from a particular firm. Greenstein (1993) analyses federal procurement of commercial mainframe computer systems during the 1970s, and finds that an agency is likely to acquire a system from an incumbent vendor, even when controlling for factors other than the buyer's purchase history that may have influenced the vendor-buyer match; he suggests switching costs were an important source of incumbent advantage in this market.¹⁶ Shum (2004) analyzes panel data on breakfast cereal purchases, and finds that households switching brands incur average implicit switching costs of \$3.43 – which exceeds every brand's price! (However he also finds advertising can be effective in attracting customers currently loyal to rival brands.)

Because switching costs are usually both consumer-specific and not directly observable, and micro data on individual consumers' purchase histories are seldom available, less direct methods of assessing the level of switching costs are often needed. Kim et al. (2003) estimate a first-order condition and demand and supply equations in a Bertrand oligopoly to extract information on the magnitude and significance of switching costs from highly aggregated panel data which do not contain customer-specific information. Their point estimate of switching costs in the market for Norwegian bank loans is 4.12% of the customer's loan, which seems substantial in this market, and their results also suggest that switching costs are even larger for smaller, retail customers.¹⁷ Shy (2002) argues that data on prices and market shares reveal that the cost of switching between banks varies from 0 to 11% of the average balance in the Finnish market for bank accounts. He also uses similar kinds of evidence to argue that switching costs in the Israeli cellular phone market approximately equal the price of an average phone.

One defect of all these studies is that none of them models the dynamic effects of switching costs that (as we discuss below) are the main focus of the theoretical literature;

¹⁴ Experimental studies are even fewer and more recent, but include Cason and Friedman (2002), and Cason, Friedman and Milam (2003). See footnote 36.

¹⁵ The theoretical literature arguably began with Selten's (1965) model of "demand inertia" (which assumed a firm's current sales depended in part on history, even though it did not explicitly model consumers' behavior in the presence of switching costs), and then took off in the 1980s.

¹⁶ Breuhan (1997) studies the switching costs associated with the Windows and DOS operating systems for personal computers. See Chen (2005) for a general survey of the literature on switching costs in information technology.

¹⁷ Sharpe (1997) studies the bank retail deposit market and argues that the data support the model of Klemperer (1987b). See also Waterson (2003).

1 in effect, these empirical studies assume consumers myopically maximize current utility 1
2 without considering the future effects of their choices.¹⁸ 2

3 Other empirical studies, many of which we will discuss below in the context of spe- 3
4 cific theories, provide evidence for the importance of switching costs for credit cards 4
5 [Ausubel (1991), Calem and Mester (1995), Stango (2002)]; cigarettes [Elzinga and 5
6 Mills (1998, 1999)]; computer software [Larkin (2004)]; supermarkets [Chevalier and 6
7 Scharfstein (1996)]; air travel, and alliances of airlines in different frequent-flyer pro- 7
8 grams [Fernandes (2001), Carlsson and Löfgren (2004)]; individual airlines for different 8
9 flight-segments of a single trip [Carlton, Landes and Posner (1980)]; phone services 9
10 [Knittel (1997), Gruber and Verboven (2001), Park (2005), Shi et al. (2006), Viard (in 10
11 press)]; television viewing choices [Moshkin and Shachar (2000)]; online brokerage 11
12 services [Chen and Hitt (2002)]; electricity suppliers [Waterson (2003)]; bookstores 12
13 [Lee and Png (2004)]; and automobile insurance [Schlesinger and von der Schulenberg 13
14 (1993), Israel (2005), Waterson (2003)]. 14

15 There is also an extensive empirical marketing literature on brand loyalty (or 15
16 “state dependence”) which often reflects, or has equivalent effects to, switching costs. 16
17 Seetharaman et al. (1999) summarize this literature; a widely cited paper is Guadagni 17
18 and Little’s (1983) analysis of the coffee market.¹⁹ Finally, Klemperer (1995) gives 18
19 many other examples of markets with switching costs, and UK Office of Fair Trading 19
20 (2003) presents useful case studies. 20

22 2.3. Firms who cannot commit to future prices 22

24 2.3.1. Bargains followed by ripoffs 24

26 The core model of the switching costs literature posits that firms cannot commit to 26
27 future prices. 27

28 The simplest model has two periods and two symmetric firms, with costs c_t in periods 28
29 $t = 1, 2$.²⁰ A single consumer has a switching cost s and reservation price $r_t > c_t + s$ 29
30 for one unit of the period- t good, firms set prices, and there is no discounting. Then in 30
31 period 2 the firm that sold in period 1 will exercise its ex post market power by pricing 31
32 (just below) $c_2 + s$ (the rival firm will offer price c_2 but make no sale). Foreseeing 32
33 this, firms are willing to price below cost in period 1 to acquire the customer who will 33
34 34

35 ¹⁸ But Viard (in press) studies the impact of number portability on prices in the U.S. market for toll-free 35
36 numbers using a dynamic model in which consumers consider the future effects of their choices. 36

37 ¹⁹ Jacoby and Chestnut (1978) survey earlier attempts in the marketing literature to measure brand loyalty. 37
38 Theoretical marketing papers include Wernerfelt (1991) (see footnote 34), Villas Boas (2006) (see footnote 9), 38
39 and Kim et al. (2001) who study incentives to offer reward programs that create pecuniary switching costs. 39
40 Seetharaman and Che (in press) discusses adopting switching costs models to model “variety seeking” con- 40
41 sumers with negative switching costs. 41

42 ²⁰ $c_2 \neq c_1$ is especially natural if the second-period good is spare parts/repair services/consumables for a 42
43 first-period capital good. 43

43 It makes no difference if there are $n > 2$ firms. 43

1 become a valuable follow-on purchaser in period 2; undifferentiated competition to win
2 the customer drives period-1 prices down to $c_1 - s$.

3 Note that in this simple model the consumer's expectations do not matter. Competi-
4 tion among non-myopic firms makes buyer myopia irrelevant.²¹

5 Although first-period prices are below cost, there is nothing predatory about them,
6 and this pattern of low "introductory offers" or "penetration pricing" (see Section 2.6),
7 followed by higher prices to exploit locked-in customers is familiar in many mar-
8 kets. For example, banks offer gifts to induce customers to open new accounts, and
9 Klemperer (1995) gives more examples.²² This "bargains-then-ripoffs" pattern is a main
10 theme of many two-period models in the switching-costs literature, including Klem-
11 perer (1987a, 1987b, 1995, Section 3.2), Basu and Bell (1991), Padilla (1992), Basu
12 (1993), Ahtiala (1998), Lal and Matutes (1994), Pereira (2000), Gehrig and Stenbacka
13 (2002), Ellison (2005), and Lee and Png (2004). Of these models, Klemperer (1995,
14 Section 3.2) is particularly easy to work with and to extend for other purposes.²³

15 Although the switching cost strikingly affects price in each period, it does not affect
16 the life-cycle price $c_1 + c_2$ that the consumer pays in the simple model of this subsec-
17 tion. As in the case of full commitment noted in Section 2.1, we can here view the
18 life-cycle (the bundle consisting of the period-1 good and the period-2 good) as the real
19 locus of competition, and competition in *that* product has worked exactly as one would
20 hope. In particular, the absence of price commitment did not lead to any inefficiency in
21 this very simple model.

22 2.3.2. *Inefficiency of the price-path*

23 Although the outcome above is socially efficient, the inability to contract in period 1 on
24 period-2 prices in general leads to inefficiencies, even if firms still earn zero profits over
25 the two periods. Even slight generalizations of the simple model above show this.
26
27
28
29

30 ²¹ Because firms are symmetric and so charge the same price in period 2, the consumer is indifferent in
31 period 1. If firms A, B had different costs c_{A2} and c_{B2} in period 2, then if A made the period-1 sale, its period-2
32 price would be $p_{A2} = c_{B2} + s$ (that is, constrained by B), while if B made the period-1 sale, its period-2
33 price would be $p_{B2} = c_{A2} + s$. In this case, the prices that firms charge in period 1 (and hence also firms'
34 incentives to invest in cost reduction, etc.) depend on whether the consumer has rational expectations about
35 the period-2 prices it will face or whether the consumer acts myopically. We discuss the role of expectations
36 in Section 2.4.5. Other simple models such as that in Klemperer (1995, Section 3.2) sidestep the issue of
37 consumers' expectations by assuming period-2 prices are constrained by consumers' reservation price r_2 ,
38 hence independent of consumers' period-1 choice. The distinction between these modeling approaches is
39 crucial in some analyses of network effects (see Section 3.7.3).

40 It is important for the modeling that the customer buys from just one firm in period 1. If a unit mass of
41 consumers splits evenly between the firms in period 1, there may be no pure-strategy equilibrium in period 2.
42 See footnote 31.

43 ²² Skott and Jepsen (2000) argue that a tough drug policy may encourage the aggressive marketing of illegal
44 drugs to new users, by increasing the costs of switching between dealers.

²³ For example, the many-period extension of this model is Beggs and Klemperer (1992).

1 In particular, if the consumer has downward-sloping demand in each period and firms 1
 2 are restricted to linear pricing (i.e. no two-part pricing), or if firms face downward- 2
 3 sloping demands because there are many heterogeneous consumers with different reser- 3
 4 vation prices among whom they cannot distinguish, then there will be excessive sales in 4
 5 period 1 and too few sales in period 2 [Klemperer (1987a)].²⁴ 5

6 Our simple model also assumed that ex-post profits can feed through into better early 6
 7 deals for the consumers. In practice this may not be possible. For example, setting very 7
 8 low introductory prices may attract worthless customers who will not buy after the in- 8
 9 troduitory period.²⁵ If for this or other reasons firms dissipate their future profits in 9
 10 unproductive activities (e.g., excessive advertising and marketing) rather than by offer- 10
 11 ing first-period customers truly better deals, or if, for example, risk-aversion and 11
 12 liquidity concerns limit the extent to which firms charge low introductory-period prices 12
 13 to the consumers whom they will exploit later, then consumers are made worse off by 13
 14 switching costs, even if competition ensures that firms are no better off. 14

15 In our simple model firms make zero profits with or without switching costs. But 15
 16 switching costs and the higher ex-post prices and lower ex-ante prices that they create 16
 17 can either raise or lower oligopolists' profits. The reason is that, in cutting its first- 17
 18 period price, each firm sets its *marginal* first-period profit sacrifice equal to its marginal 18
 19 second-period gain, so the *total* first-period profit given up can be greater or less than the 19
 20 total second-period gain [see, especially, Klemperer (1987a, 1987b)]. However, the argu- 20
 21 ments we will review in Section 2.4 (which also apply to two-period models) suggest 21
 22 firms typically gain from switching costs.²⁶ 22

23 Finally note that while we (and the literature) primarily discuss firms exploiting 23
 24 locked-in consumers with high prices, consumers can equally be exploited with low 24
 25 qualities. And if it is hard to contract on future quality, contracting on price does not 25
 26 easily resolve the inefficiencies discussed above.²⁷ 26
 27

28 2.4. Firms who cannot discriminate between cohorts of consumers 28

29
 30 In our first bargains-then-ripoffs model, we assumed that there was just one customer. It 30
 31 is easy to see that the basic lessons extend to the case where there are many customers 31
 32 but firms can charge different prices to "old" and "new" consumers, perhaps because 32
 33

34
 35 ²⁴ Thus discussions of aftermarket power point out the possibility of sub-optimal tradeoffs between aftermar- 35
 36 ket maintenance services, self-supplied repair, and replacement of machines. See Borenstein, MacKie-Mason 36
 37 and Netz (2000), for instance.

38 ²⁵ This is a particular problem if the introductory price would have to be negative to fully dissipate the ex-post 37
 38 rents. There may also be limits on firms' ability to price discriminate in favor of new customers without, for 38
 39 example, antagonizing their "regular" customers. See Section 2.4 for the case in which price-discrimination 39
 40 is infeasible.

41 ²⁶ See, especially, Klemperer (1987b). Ellison (2005) argues that firms gain from switching costs for a natural 40
 41 type of demand structure.

42 ²⁷ Farrell and Shapiro (1989) show that price commitments may actually be worse than pointless. See foot- 42
 43 note 78. 43

1 “old” consumers are buying “follow on” goods such as spare parts. But when old consumers
 2 buy the same good as new consumers, it can be difficult for firms to distinguish
 3 between them. We now consider this case when a new generation of consumers arrives
 4 in the market in each of many periods.

6 2.4.1. *Free-entry model*

8 Even if firms cannot distinguish between cohorts of consumers, we may get the same
 9 pricing pattern if firms specialize sufficiently. In particular, in a simple model with free
 10 entry of identical firms and constant returns to scale, in each period some firm(s) will
 11 specialize in selling to new consumers while any firm with any old locked-in customers
 12 will sell only to those old customers.

13 If consumers have constant probability ϕ of surviving into each subsequent period,
 14 new-entrant firms with constant marginal costs c and discount factor δ offer price $c - \phi\delta s$
 15 and sell to any new consumers, while established firms charge s more, i.e., charge
 16 $c + (1 - \phi\delta)s$ in every period.²⁸ That is, established firms charge the highest price
 17 such that no “old” consumers want to switch, and new entrants’ expected discounted
 18 profits are zero. Thus the price paths consumers face are exactly as if firms could perfectly
 19 discriminate between them. In either case one can think of every (new and old)
 20 consumer as getting a “discount” of $\phi\delta s$ in each period reflecting the present value of
 21 the extent to which he can be exploited in the future, given his option of paying s to
 22 switch to an entrant; simultaneously, every “old” consumer is indeed exploited by s in
 23 every period. The outcome is socially efficient.

25 2.4.2. *Do oligopolists hold simultaneous sales?, or staggered sales?, or no sales?*

27 Just as in the free-entry model, if there is a small number of firms who face no threat
 28 of entry and who cannot distinguish between cohorts of consumers, it is possible that
 29 in every period one firm might hold a “sale”, setting a low price to attract new consumers,
 30 while the other(s) set a higher price to exploit their old consumers. Farrell and
 31 Shapiro (1988) explore such an equilibrium in a model that has just one new and one
 32 old consumer in each period. Since this assumption implies that in any period one firm
 33 has no customer base while the other already has half the market “locked-in”, it is not
 34 surprising that this model predicts asynchronous sales. However, Padilla’s (1995) many-
 35 customer model yields somewhat similar results: firms mix across prices but a firm with
 36 more locked-in customers has more incentive to charge a high price to exploit them,
 37

38
 39
 40 ²⁸ See Klemperer (1983). This assumes all consumers have reservation prices exceeding $c + (1 - \phi\delta)s$ for
 41 a single unit in each period, and that all consumers survive into the next period with the same probability, ϕ ,
 42 so a consumer’s value is independent of his age. If consumers live for exactly two periods the price paths in
 43 general depend on whether firms can directly distinguish between old and new consumers (as in the previous
 subsection) or cannot do this (as in this section).

1 and so sets high prices with greater probabilities than its rival.²⁹ These papers illustrate 1
 2 how switching costs can segment an otherwise undifferentiated products market as firms 2
 3 focus on their established customers and do not compete aggressively for their rivals' 3
 4 buyers, letting oligopolists extract positive profits. 4

5 More generally it is unclear whether oligopolists will hold sales simultaneously or 5
 6 will stagger them. On the one hand, it might make most sense to forgo short run profits 6
 7 to go after new customers when your rivals are not doing so. On the other hand, if 7
 8 switching costs are learning costs, then staggered sales cause switching and create a 8
 9 pool of highly mobile consumers who have no further switching costs, intensifying 9
 10 future competition (see Section 2.5). Klemperer (1983, 1989) and the extension of the 10
 11 latter model in Elzinga and Mills (1999) all have simultaneous sales.^{30,31} 11

12 Another possibility is that rather than holding occasional sales, each oligopolist in 12
 13 every period sets a single intermediate price that trades off its incentive to attract new 13
 14 consumers and its incentive to exploit its old customers. In a steady state, each firm's 14
 15 price will be the same in every period. Such an equilibrium could break down in several 15
 16 ways: if the flow of new consumers is too large, a firm would deviate by cutting price 16
 17 significantly to specialize in new consumers. If some consumers' switching costs and 17
 18 reservation prices are too large, a firm would deviate by raising price significantly to 18
 19 exploit old customers while giving up on new ones. And if firms' products are undiffer- 19
 20 entiated except by switching costs, a firm might deviate to undercut the other slightly 20
 21 and win all the new consumers.³² But when none of these breakdowns occurs, there 21
 22 22

23 23
 24 ²⁹ Farrell and Shapiro assume firms set price sequentially in each period, but Padilla assumes firms set prices 24
 25 simultaneously. See also Anderson, Kumar and Rajiv (2004). 25

26 ³⁰ Elzinga and Mills' model fits with observed behavior in the cigarette market. See also Elzinga and Mills 26
 27 (1998). 27

28 ³¹ In a single-period model in which all consumers have the same switching cost, s , and many customers are 28
 29 already attached to firms before competition starts, the incentive to either undercut a rival's price by s or to 29
 30 overcut the rival's price by just less than s generally eliminates the possibility of pure-strategy equilibria if s is 30
 31 not too large: numerous papers [Baye et al. (1992), Padilla (1992), Deneckere et al. (1992), Fisher and Wilson 31
 32 (1995), Green and Scotchmer (1986), Rosenthal (1980), Shilony (1977), Varian (1980)], analyse single-period 32
 33 models of switching costs (or models that can be interpreted in this way) that yield mixed strategy equilibria, 33
 34 and Padilla (1995) finds mixed-strategy equilibria in a multi-period model. However, adding more real-world 34
 35 features to some of these models yields either asymmetric pure-strategy equilibria or symmetric pure-strategy 35
 36 Bayesian–Nash equilibria (if information is incomplete) rather than mixed-strategy equilibria. 36

37 Asymmetric pure-strategy equilibrium can be interpreted as asynchronous sales. Like Farrell and Shapiro 37
 38 (1988), Deneckere et al. find that if firms can choose when to set their prices, the firm with fewer locked-in 38
 39 customers sets price second and holds a "sale". 39

40 Symmetric Bayesian equilibria correspond to "tradeoff pricing" of the kind discussed in the next paragraph 40
 41 of the text. Bulow and Klemperer (1998, Appendix B) give an example of this by incorporating incomplete 41
 42 information about firms' costs into a one-period model with switching costs that would otherwise yield mixed- 42
 43 strategy equilibria. 43

44 ³² However, if consumers have rational expectations about future prices, a small price cut may win only a 44
 45 fraction of new consumers; see Section 2.4.5 below. 45

1 may be a stationary “no-sales” equilibrium: much of the literature examines such equi- 1
 2 libria.³³ 2

3 **Beggs and Klemperer (1992)** explore a no-sales equilibrium in which in period t , firm 3
 4 i sets price 4

$$5 \quad p_t^i = c^i + \alpha + \beta\sigma_{t-1}^i + \gamma(c^j - c^i), \quad (1) \quad 5$$

6 6
 7 where c^i is i 's cost, σ_{t-1}^i is i 's previous-period market share (i.e., the fraction of con- 7
 8 sumers i sold to in the previous period) and α , β , and γ are positive constants. These 8
 9 constants depend on four parameters: the discount factor, the market growth rate, the 9
 10 rate at which individual consumers leave the market, and the extent to which the firms' 10
 11 products are functionally differentiated; when firms are symmetric, the steady-state 11
 12 equilibrium price increases in the last of these four variables and decreases in the other 12
 13 three.³⁴ 13
 14 14

15 2.4.3. *Oligopoly dynamics* 15

16 16
 17 We have seen that sometimes a lean and hungry firm with few locked-in customers holds 17
 18 a sale while its rivals with larger customer bases do not. Similarly, in no-sale models 18
 19 in which all firms sell to both old and new consumers, a firm with more old locked-in 19
 20 customers has a greater incentive to exploit them, so will usually price higher and win 20
 21 fewer new unattached consumers. In both cases, the result is stable industry dynamics 21
 22 as more aggressive smaller firms catch up with larger ones. 22

23 In the equilibrium of **Beggs and Klemperer's (1992)** no-sale duopoly model, de- 23
 24 scribed in (1) above, for example, $\beta > 0$, so larger firms charge higher prices, yielding 24
 25 stable dynamics. Indeed, it can be shown that $\sigma_t^i = \sigma^i + (\mu)^t(\sigma_0^i - \sigma^i)$ in which σ^i is firm 25
 26 i 's steady-state market share and $0 < \mu < \frac{1}{2}$, so the duopoly converges rapidly and 26
 27 monotonically back to a stable steady state after any shock. **Chen and Rosenthal (1996)** 27
 28 likewise demonstrate a tendency for market shares to return to a given value, while in 28
 29 **Taylor (2003)** any initial asymmetries in market shares between otherwise symmetric 29
 30 firms may persist to some extent but are dampened over time. 30

31 However, the opposite is possible. If larger firms have lower marginal costs, and es- 31
 32 pecially if economies of scale make it possible to drive smaller firms completely out of 32
 33 the market, then a larger firm may charge a lower price than its smaller rivals. In this 33
 34 case, any small advantage one firm obtains can be magnified and the positive-feedback 34
 35 dynamics can result in complete dominance by that firm. This is just as is typical with 35
 36 36

37 37
 38 ³³ Even if there are occasional “sales”, firms will balance exploiting the old with attracting the new in “ordi- 38
 39 nary” periods, and this literature is relevant to these ordinary periods. 39

40 In the case of monopoly, both stationary “no-sales” models [see **Holmes (1990)**] and models in which periodic 40
 41 sales arise in equilibrium [see **Gallini and Karp (1989)**] can be constructed. 41

42 ³⁴ **Klemperer (1995)** discusses this model further: variants are in **Chow (1995)** and **To (1995)**. Other important 42
 43 “no-sales” models are von **Weizsäcker (1984)** and **Wernerfelt (1991)**; **Phelps and Winter's (1970)** and **Sutton's** 43
 44 **(1980)** models of search costs, and **Radner's (2003)** model of “viscous demand”, are related. 43

1 network effects (see Section 3.5.3) – indeed, switching costs create positive network 1
 2 effects in this case, because it is more attractive to buy from a firm that other consumers 2
 3 buy from [Beggs (1989)]. 3

4 So switching-costs markets *can* “tip” like network-effects markets. But the simple 4
 5 models suggest a presumption that markets with switching costs are stable, with larger 5
 6 firms acting as less-aggressive “fat cats”.³⁵ 6
 7

8 2.4.4. *The level of profits* 8 9

10 A central question in policy and in the literature is whether switching costs raise or lower 10
 11 oligopoly profits. In the simple two-period model of Section 2.3.1 they do neither, but 11
 12 many non-theorist commentators, notably Porter (1980, 1985), believe switching costs 12
 13 raise profits, and both a small body of empirical evidence including Stango (2002), Park 13
 14 (2005), Viard (in press) and Shi et al. (2006), and also the laboratory evidence of Cason 14
 15 and Friedman (2002) support this view.³⁶ As we discuss next, most models that are 15
 16 richer than the simple model tend to confirm this popular idea that switching costs raise 16
 17 profits. 17

18 If duopolists who cannot discriminate between old and new buyers hold asynchron- 18
 19 ous sales, they can earn positive profits in price competition even if their products are 19
 20 undifferentiated except by switching costs. The switching costs segment the market, and 20
 21 when one firm (generally the firm with the larger customer base) charges a high price 21
 22 to exploit its locked-in customers, the other firm then has market power even over new 22
 23 consumers because it can operate under the price umbrella of its fat-cat rival [see Farrell 23
 24 and Shapiro (1988) and Padilla (1995)]. So in these models, a duopolist earns positive 24
 25 profits even in a period in which it starts with no locked-in customers. (However, if 25
 26 there were two identical new firms entering in every period, they would not generally 26
 27 earn any profits.) 27

28 Furthermore, if switching costs are heterogeneous, a similar effect means even 28
 29 duopolists who can (and do) discriminate between old and new customers can earn 29
 30 positive profits in price competition with products that are undifferentiated except by 30
 31 switching costs – see our discussion of Chen (1997) and Taylor (2003) in Section 2.5.1, 31
 32 below. 32
 33

34 In addition, the symmetric stationary price of a “no-sales” equilibrium of the kind 34
 35 described in Section 2.4.3 is also usually higher than if there were no switching costs. 35
 36 There are two reasons: 36
 37

38
 39 ³⁵ In the terminology introduced by Fudenberg and Tirole (1984). In the terminology introduced by Bulow, 39
 40 Geanakoplos and Klemperer (1985a, 1985b), there is strategic complementarity between a firm’s current price 40
 41 and its competitors’ future prices. See also Farrell (1986). 41

42 ³⁶ However, Dubé et al. (2006) have very recently calibrated a model with data from the orange juice and 42
 43 margarine markets, where consumers exhibit inertia in their brand choices, and come to the opposite conclu- 43
 44 sion. 44

1 First, the “fat cat” effect applies here too, though in the indirect way discussed in 1
 2 Section 2.4.3; firms price less aggressively because they recognize that if they win fewer 2
 3 customers today, their rivals will be bigger and (in simple models with switching costs) 3
 4 less aggressive tomorrow. 4

5 Second, when consumers face switching costs, they care about expected future prices 5
 6 as well as current prices. Depending on how expectations of future prices react to current 6
 7 prices, this may make new customers (not yet locked into any firm), react either more 7
 8 or less elastically to price differences. However, as we now discuss, the presumption is 8
 9 that it makes their response less elastic than absent switching costs, thus raising firms’ 9
 10 prices and profits. 10

11 12 2.4.5. *The effect of consumers’ expectations on prices* 12

13 14 How consumers’ expectations about future prices depend on current prices critically 14
 15 affects competition and the price level – just as in other parts of the lock-in literature.³⁷ 15
 16 Consumers’ expectations about their own future tastes also matter in a market with 16
 17 real (functional) product differentiation; we assume consumers expect some positive 17
 18 correlation between their current and future tastes. 18

19 In a market without switching costs, a consumer compares differences between prod- 19
 20 ucts’ prices with differences between how well they match his current tastes. But with 20
 21 switching costs, he recognizes that whichever product he buys today he will, very likely 21
 22 buy again tomorrow. So switching costs make him more willing to change brands in 22
 23 response to a price cut if, roughly speaking, he expects that price cut to be more perma- 23
 24 nent than his tastes; they will lower his willingness to change in response to a price cut 24
 25 if he expects the price cut to be less permanent than his tastes. 25

26 27 (i) *Consumers who assume any price cut below their expected price will be maintained* 27 28 *in the future* 28

29 If consumers expect a firm that cuts price today to maintain that price cut forever then, 29
 30 relative to the case of no switching costs, they are more influenced by such a price cut 30
 31 than by their current (impermanent) product preferences.³⁸ (In the limit with infinite 31
 32 switching costs, a consumer’s product choice is forever, so unless his preferences are 32
 33 also permanent, products are in effect less differentiated.) So switching costs then *lower* 33
 34 34

35 ³⁷ Consumers’ expectations about how future prices depend on costs are, of course, also important in 35
 36 determining whether firms have the correct incentives to invest in future cost reduction. This issue does not 36
 37 seem to have been directly addressed by the switching-costs literature, but we discuss in Section 3.7 how a 37
 38 network-effects model can be reinterpreted to address it. See also footnote 21. 38

39 ³⁸ A related model with these expectations is Borenstein, MacKie-Mason and Netz (2000). In their model, 39
 40 consumers buy a differentiated durable good (“equipment”) from one of two firms and must then buy an 40
 41 aftermarket product (“service”) in the next period from the same firm. High service prices generate profits 41
 42 from locked-in customers, but deter new customers from buying equipment because they expect high service 42
 43 prices in the following period. So the stationary equilibrium service price lies between marginal cost and the 43
 43 monopoly price, even if firms’ products are undifferentiated except by switching costs. 43

1 equilibrium prices; see von Weizsäcker's (1984) model in which each firm chooses a 1
 2 single once-and-for-all price (and quality) to which it is (by assumption) committed 2
 3 forever, but in which consumers are uncertain about their future tastes.³⁹ 3

4 We will see below (see Section 3.7) that a similar effect arises when there are strong 4
 5 proprietary network effects and differentiated products. Then, consumers' desire to be 5
 6 compatible with others overwhelms their differences in tastes and drives firms whose 6
 7 networks are incompatible towards undifferentiated Bertrand competition. Here, with 7
 8 switching costs, each consumer's desire to be compatible with his future self (who in 8
 9 expectation has tastes closer to the average) likewise reduces effective differentiation 9
 10 and drives the firms towards undifferentiated Bertrand competition. 10

11
 12 (ii) *Consumers whose expectations about future prices are unaffected by current prices* 12

13 If consumers expect that a firm that unexpectedly cuts price this period will return to 13
 14 setting the expected price next period, then price changes are less permanent than, and 14
 15 so influence consumers less than, taste differences. So switching costs raise price levels. 15
 16 Each consumer is making a product choice that his future selves must live with, and his 16
 17 future selves' preferences (while possibly different from his own) are likely to be closer 17
 18 to his currently-preferred product than to other products. Consumers are therefore less 18
 19 attracted by a current price cut than absent switching costs. 19

20
 21 (iii) *Consumers with rational expectations* 21

22 If consumers have fully rational expectations they will recognize that a lower price 22
 23 today generally presages a higher price tomorrow. As we discussed above, a firm that 23
 24 wins more new consumers today will be a "fatter cat" with relatively greater incentive to 24
 25 price high tomorrow; and we expect that this will typically be the main effect, although 25
 26 other effects are possible.⁴⁰ So consumers with rational expectations will be even less 26
 27 sensitive than in (ii) to price cutting, and switching costs thus raise prices.⁴¹ 27

28
 29
 30 ³⁹ The effect we discussed in the previous Section 2.4.4 – that firms moderate price competition in order to 30
 31 fatten and thus soften their opponents – is also eliminated by von Weizsäcker's commitment assumption. 31

32 ⁴⁰ See, e.g., Beggs and Klemperer (1992), Klemperer (1987a, 1987b, 1987c), Padilla (1992, 1995). As dis- 32
 33 cussed above, the fat cat effect can be reversed if, e.g., economics of scale or network effects are strong 33
 34 enough. [Doganoglu and Grzybowski (2004) show how appending network benefits to Klemperer's (1987b) 34
 35 model lowers prices.] Another caveat is that with incomplete information about firms' costs a lower price 35
 36 might signal lower costs, so consumers might rationally expect a lower price today to presage a lower price 36
 37 tomorrow. But if there is incomplete information about costs, firms might price high in order to signal high 37
 38 costs and thus soften future competition. [A search-costs model that is suggestive about how firm-specific 38
 39 cost shocks might affect pricing in a switching-costs model is Fishman and Rob (1995).] Furthermore, if 39
 40 firms differ in the extent that they can or wish to exploit locked-in customers, consumers will expect that a 40
 41 lower price today means a higher price tomorrow, which will also be a force for higher prices. 41

42 ⁴¹ Holmes (1990) analyses price-setting by a monopolist facing overlapping generations of consumers who 42
 43 must sink set-up costs before using the monopolist's good. He finds that if consumers have rational expecta- 43
 tions, then prices are higher than those that would prevail if the firm could commit to future prices. The reason 43
 is similar: rational consumers are insensitive to price cuts because they understand that a low price today will 43
 encourage other consumers to sink more costs which in turn results in higher future prices.

1 In summary, while there is no unambiguous conclusion, under either economists' 1
 2 standard rational-expectations assumption [(iii)], or a more myopic assumption [(ii)], 2
 3 switching costs raise prices overall. Only if consumers believe unanticipated price 3
 4 changes are more permanent than their product preferences do switching costs lower 4
 5 prices. For these reasons, [Beggs and Klemperer \(1992\)](#) argue that switching costs tend 5
 6 to raise prices when new and old customers are charged a common price. There is there- 6
 7 fore also a more general presumption that switching costs usually raise oligopolists' 7
 8 total profits. 8

9 10 *2.4.6. Collusive behavior* 10 11

12 Like most of the literature, the discussion above assumes non-cooperative behavior by 12
 13 firms, without strategic threats of punishment if others compete too hard.⁴² 13

14 One should also ask whether switching costs hinder or facilitate collusion, in which 14
 15 high prices are supported by firms punishing any other firm thought to have deviated. 15
 16 While many people's intuition is that switching costs support collusion, this remains 16
 17 unclear as a theoretical matter: 17

18 Switching costs make deviating from a collusive agreement less profitable in the short 18
 19 run, because it is harder to quickly "steal" another firm's customers. But, for the same 19
 20 reason, switching costs make it more costly to punish a deviating firm. So it is not 20
 21 obvious whether collusion is easier or harder on balance, and in [Padilla's \(1995\)](#) and 21
 22 [Anderson et al.'s \(2004\)](#) models, which incorporate both these effects, switching costs 22
 23 actually make collusion more difficult. 23

24 Switching costs may also make it easier for firms to monitor collusion, because the 24
 25 large price changes necessary to win away a rival's locked-in customers may be easy 25
 26 to observe. And switching costs may additionally facilitate tacit collusion by providing 26
 27 "focal points" for market division, breaking a market into well-defined submarkets of 27
 28 customers who have bought from different firms. However, while these arguments are 28
 29 discussed in [Stigler \(1964\)](#) and [Klemperer \(1987a\)](#), they have not yet been well explored 29
 30 in the literature, and do not seem easy to formalize satisfactorily. Furthermore, if col- 30
 31 lusion is only easier after most customers are already locked-in, this is likely to induce 31
 32 fiercer competition prior to lock-in, as in the simple bargain-then-ripoff model. 32
 33

34 *2.5. Consumers who use multiple suppliers* 34 35

36 In the models above, as in most leading models of switching costs, switching costs 36
 37 affect prices but there is no switching in equilibrium. In reality a consumer may actually 37
 38 switch, and use different suppliers in different periods, either because firms' products 38
 39

40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
109
110
111
112
113
114
115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
123
124
125
126
127
128
129
130
131
132
133
134
135
136
137
138
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147
148
149
150
151
152
153
154
155
156
157
158
159
160
161
162
163
164
165
166
167
168
169
170
171
172
173
174
175
176
177
178
179
180
181
182
183
184
185
186
187
188
189
190
191
192
193
194
195
196
197
198
199
200
201
202
203
204
205
206
207
208
209
210
211
212
213
214
215
216
217
218
219
220
221
222
223
224
225
226
227
228
229
230
231
232
233
234
235
236
237
238
239
240
241
242
243
244
245
246
247
248
249
250
251
252
253
254
255
256
257
258
259
260
261
262
263
264
265
266
267
268
269
270
271
272
273
274
275
276
277
278
279
280
281
282
283
284
285
286
287
288
289
290
291
292
293
294
295
296
297
298
299
300
301
302
303
304
305
306
307
308
309
310
311
312
313
314
315
316
317
318
319
320
321
322
323
324
325
326
327
328
329
330
331
332
333
334
335
336
337
338
339
340
341
342
343
344
345
346
347
348
349
350
351
352
353
354
355
356
357
358
359
360
361
362
363
364
365
366
367
368
369
370
371
372
373
374
375
376
377
378
379
380
381
382
383
384
385
386
387
388
389
390
391
392
393
394
395
396
397
398
399
400
401
402
403
404
405
406
407
408
409
410
411
412
413
414
415
416
417
418
419
420
421
422
423
424
425
426
427
428
429
430
431
432
433
434
435
436
437
438
439
440
441
442
443
444
445
446
447
448
449
450
451
452
453
454
455
456
457
458
459
460
461
462
463
464
465
466
467
468
469
470
471
472
473
474
475
476
477
478
479
480
481
482
483
484
485
486
487
488
489
490
491
492
493
494
495
496
497
498
499
500
501
502
503
504
505
506
507
508
509
510
511
512
513
514
515
516
517
518
519
520
521
522
523
524
525
526
527
528
529
530
531
532
533
534
535
536
537
538
539
540
541
542
543
544
545
546
547
548
549
550
551
552
553
554
555
556
557
558
559
560
561
562
563
564
565
566
567
568
569
570
571
572
573
574
575
576
577
578
579
580
581
582
583
584
585
586
587
588
589
590
591
592
593
594
595
596
597
598
599
600
601
602
603
604
605
606
607
608
609
610
611
612
613
614
615
616
617
618
619
620
621
622
623
624
625
626
627
628
629
630
631
632
633
634
635
636
637
638
639
640
641
642
643
644
645
646
647
648
649
650
651
652
653
654
655
656
657
658
659
660
661
662
663
664
665
666
667
668
669
670
671
672
673
674
675
676
677
678
679
680
681
682
683
684
685
686
687
688
689
690
691
692
693
694
695
696
697
698
699
700
701
702
703
704
705
706
707
708
709
710
711
712
713
714
715
716
717
718
719
720
721
722
723
724
725
726
727
728
729
730
731
732
733
734
735
736
737
738
739
740
741
742
743
744
745
746
747
748
749
750
751
752
753
754
755
756
757
758
759
760
761
762
763
764
765
766
767
768
769
770
771
772
773
774
775
776
777
778
779
780
781
782
783
784
785
786
787
788
789
790
791
792
793
794
795
796
797
798
799
800
801
802
803
804
805
806
807
808
809
810
811
812
813
814
815
816
817
818
819
820
821
822
823
824
825
826
827
828
829
830
831
832
833
834
835
836
837
838
839
840
841
842
843
844
845
846
847
848
849
850
851
852
853
854
855
856
857
858
859
860
861
862
863
864
865
866
867
868
869
870
871
872
873
874
875
876
877
878
879
880
881
882
883
884
885
886
887
888
889
890
891
892
893
894
895
896
897
898
899
900
901
902
903
904
905
906
907
908
909
910
911
912
913
914
915
916
917
918
919
920
921
922
923
924
925
926
927
928
929
930
931
932
933
934
935
936
937
938
939
940
941
942
943
944
945
946
947
948
949
950
951
952
953
954
955
956
957
958
959
960
961
962
963
964
965
966
967
968
969
970
971
972
973
974
975
976
977
978
979
980
981
982
983
984
985
986
987
988
989
990
991
992
993
994
995
996
997
998
999
1000

42 For example, [Beggs and Klemperer](#) assume each firm's price depends only on its current market share and not otherwise on history, and rule out the kind of strategies described by, for example, [Abreu \(1988\)](#) or [Green and Porter \(1984\)](#) that support collusive outcomes in contexts without switching costs.

1 are differentiated and his tastes change, or because firms' relative prices to him change 1
 2 over time, as they will, in particular, when each firm charges new customers less than 2
 3 existing customers. 3

4 Furthermore, although we assumed above that each consumer buys one unit from one 4
 5 firm in each period, a consumer who values variety may buy multiple products even in 5
 6 a single period. Consumers may therefore use multiple suppliers in a period or, as we 6
 7 will discuss, each firm may produce a range of products. 7
 8

9 2.5.1. Paying consumers to switch 9

10
 11 Most of the switching costs literature assumes a firm offers the same price to all 11
 12 consumers in any given period. However, as the bargains-then-rip-offs theme stresses, firms 12
 13 would often like to price discriminate between their old locked-in customers, unattached 13
 14 (new) customers, and customers locked-in to a rival. And firms often do pay consumers 14
 15 to switch to them from rivals. For example, long-distance phone carriers make one-time 15
 16 payments to customers switching from a rival; credit card issuers offer lower interest 16
 17 rates for balance transfers from another provider; and economics departments pay 17
 18 higher salaries to faculty members moving from other departments. How does the possi- 18
 19 bility of such discrimination affect pricing? 19

20 Chen (1997) analyses a two-period, two-firm, model in which each firm can charge 20
 21 one price to its old customers and another to other consumers in the same period. In 21
 22 effect, second-priced consumers are in two separate markets according to which firm 22
 23 they bought from in the first period. Each of these "markets" is like the second period 23
 24 of our core (Section 2.3.1) two-period model. In that model all consumers had the same 24
 25 switching costs, s , so the period-2 incumbent charged a price just low enough to forestall 25
 26 actual switching.⁴³ But in Chen's model, old consumers have heterogeneous switching 26
 27 costs (and firms cannot discriminate between them, perhaps because they cannot ob- 27
 28 serve individual consumers' switching costs), so firms charge higher prices than their 28
 29 rivals to their old consumers but consumers with low switching costs switch firms. 29
 30

31 In Chen's model both firms' second-period profits and their total discounted profits 31
 32 are lower than if they could not discriminate between old and new customers. However, 32
 33 consumers might also be worse off overall, because of the costs of actually switch- 33
 34 ing. 34
 35

36
 37 ⁴³ Likewise, the simple model of Section 2.4.1 shows that if firms can price discriminate, the price will be 37
 38 $c + (1 - \phi\delta)s$ to all old consumers, and will be s lower to new consumers, but no consumers will ever actually 38
 39 switch. Similarly, Nilssen (1992) observes that if each firm can charge a different price to each consumer, there 39
 40 will be no actual switching. Nilssen showed that transactional switching costs give consumers less incentives 40
 41 to switch than do learning switching costs. Thus transactional costs lead to lower prices for new consumers, 41
 42 higher prices for loyal consumers, and so also a bigger within-period quantity distortion if there is downward- 42
 43 sloping demand in each period. [Gabrielsen and Vagstad (2003, 2004) note that two-part tariffs can in theory 43
 avoid this distortion.]

1 Firms' total discounted profits are nevertheless higher than absent switching costs 1
 2 because (as in Section 2.4.4) the switching costs segment the market, so firms have some 2
 3 market power even over customers who are new to them in the second period.^{44,45} 3

4 In Chen's two-firm model, consumers who leave their current supplier have only one 4
 5 firm to switch to, so this other firm can make positive profits even on new customers, 5
 6 and the duopolists earn positive profits in equilibrium. But with three or more firms, 6
 7 there are always at least two firms vying for any consumer willing to leave his current 7
 8 supplier and, if products are undifferentiated, these firms will bid away their expected 8
 9 lifetime profits from serving those consumers in their competition to attract them. So, 9
 10 as Taylor (2003) shows, with three or more firms, firms earn positive rents only on their 10
 11 current customers, and these rents are competed away *ex ante*, as in our core model. 11

12 These models of "paying customers to switch" suggest repeat buyers pay higher 12
 13 rather than lower prices. While this is often observed, we also often observe the op- 13
 14 posite pattern in which customers are rewarded for loyalty. Taylor's model provides one 14
 15 possible explanation. He shows that if switching costs are transactional, consumers may 15
 16 move between suppliers to signal that they have low switching costs and so improve 16
 17 their terms of trade. Because this switching is socially costly, equilibrium contracts may 17
 18 discourage it through "loyal customer" pricing policies that give better terms to loyal 18
 19 customers than to those who patronized other firms in the past. But Taylor nevertheless 19
 20 finds that firms charge the lowest prices to new customers. 20

21 Shaffer and Zhang (2000) study a single-period model that is similar to the second 21
 22 period of Chen's model but in which the distributions of switching costs from the two 22
 23 firms are different. If firm A's customers have lower and more uniform switching costs 23
 24 than firm B's, then A's loyal-customer demand is more elastic than its new-customer 24
 25 demand, so it may charge a lower price to its loyal customers than to customers switch- 25
 26 ing from B. But this rationale is asymmetric, and this model never results in both firms 26
 27 charging lower prices to loyal customers than to switching customers.⁴⁶ 27
 28
 29
 30

31 ⁴⁴ Because in this model a firm's old and new customers are effectively in unconnected markets, both of the 31
 32 firm's prices are independent of its previous-period market share, by contrast with the no-price-discrimination 32
 33 models discussed above. This feature allows Taylor (2003) to extend Chen's model to many periods and 33
 34 many firms, but Arbatskaya (2000) shows that the "independence" result does not persist if there is functional 34
 35 product differentiation as well as switching costs. 35

36 ⁴⁵ Gehrig and Stenbacka (2004a) develop a model in which the last two periods are similar to Chen's model, 36
 37 and in which profits are increasing in the size of switching costs; in Gehrig and Stenbacka's *three*-period 37
 38 model firms therefore (non-cooperatively) make product choices that maximize the switching costs between 38
 39 them. See also Gehrig and Stenbacka (2004b). In another related model, Gehrig and Stenbacka (2005) find 39
 40 that when goods are vertically differentiated and consumers have switching costs, two firms choose to produce 40
 41 the highest quality, by contrast with most models of vertical product differentiation in which just one firm 41
 42 produces the top quality. 42

43 ⁴⁶ Lee (1997) also studies a one-period switching-cost model similar to the second period of Chen's model. 43
 Fudenberg and Tirole (2000) explore a two-period model with some similar features to Chen's, in which firms 44
 price discriminate between consumers based on their past demands, but with real functional product differ- 45
 entiation between firms and without real (socially costly) switching costs; they too find that loyal customers 46

1 There are also models of contractual switching costs that result in lower effective 1
 2 prices to repeat customers than to new customers, and contracts that favor repeat cus- 2
 3 tomers arise endogenously in some of these models (see Section 2.8.3). But the literature 3
 4 has found it hard to explain how real switching costs might generate discrimination in 4
 5 favor of old customers. 5
 6

7 2.5.2. *Is there too much switching?* 7 8

9 Consumers decide whether or when to switch, and pay the switching costs. So there will 9
 10 generally be the wrong amount of switching if (i) firms' relative prices to a consumer 10
 11 fail to reflect their relative marginal costs,⁴⁷ or (ii) consumers switch (or not) in order to 11
 12 affect firms' future prices, or (iii) consumers' switching costs are not real social costs. 12
 13 Most simple models recognize no efficiency role for switching, so any switching in such 13
 14 models is inefficient. 14
 15

16 (i) *Price differences do not reflect cost differences* 16

17 The bargains-then-ripoffs theme predicts that, when they can do so, firms charge lower 17
 18 prices to their new consumers. As a result, a given consumer will face different prices 18
 19 from different firms that do not reflect any cost differences between firms. This is true 19
 20 even when all firms symmetrically charge high prices to old customers and lower prices 20
 21 to new customers. Although some simple models such as our core (Section 2.3.1) model 21
 22 predict no switching, in general inefficient switching results.⁴⁸ 22
 23

24 When firms do not price discriminate between new and old consumers, the same re- 24
 25 sult applies for a slightly different reason. As we saw in Section 2.4, a firm with a larger 25
 26 customer base will then charge a larger markup over its marginal cost. So if consumers 26
 27 have differing switching costs, such a firm's price exploits its old high switching-cost 27
 28 customers and induces its low switching-cost consumers to switch to a smaller firm or 28
 29 entrant. Thus Gabszewicz, Pepall and Thisse (1992), Farrell and Shapiro (1988), and 29
 30 Wang and Wen (1998) also predict excessive switching to smaller firms and entrants. 30
 31

32
 33 are charged higher prices than switchers. However, they also show that firms may wish to offer long-term 33
 34 contracts that offer consumers a high period-one price in return for a guaranteed low period-two price (see 34
 35 Section 2.8.3). [Villas-Boas (1999) analyses a many-period model similar to Fudenberg and Tirole's but does 35
 36 not consider long-term contracts.] Acquisti and Varian (2005) present a related two-period monopoly model 36
 37 which can be interpreted as being of consumers with switching costs. 37

38 ⁴⁷ Consumers must also have rational expectations about future price differences, etc. 37

39 ⁴⁸ Even if all consumers have the same switching cost, if an entrant's production cost plus that switching cost 38
 40 exceeds the incumbent's production cost, then in a *quantity*-competition model the entrant will sell to some of 39
 41 them, thus inducing inefficient switching [Klemperer (1988)]. This result is just the standard oligopoly result 40
 42 that a higher-cost firm wins a socially excessive market share (though at a smaller markup). 41

43 A caveat is that these excessive-switching results take the number of firms as given. If the switching costs 42
 44 mean there is too little entry from the social viewpoint (see Section 2.7.2) then there may for this reason be 43
 45 too little switching. 43

1 (ii) *Consumers switch in order to affect prices* 1

2 If a consumer is a large fraction of the market, or if firms can discriminate between 2
3 consumers (so each consumer is, in effect, a separate market), a consumer may switch 3
4 to affect future prices. 4

5 If switching costs are learning costs, switching strengthens a consumer's outside op- 5
6 tion, so he may switch in order to strengthen his bargaining position – by switching 6
7 he effectively creates a second source of supply and thereby increases the competition 7
8 to supply him in the future [Lewis and Yildirim (2005)]. And even if switching costs 8
9 are transactional (and firms are imperfectly informed about their magnitude), we saw in 9
10 Section 2.5.1 that consumers may switch to signal that their switching costs are low and 10
11 so improve their terms of trade. 11

12 Strategic consumers may also commit to ignore switching costs (or acting as if their 12
13 switching costs were lower than they truly are) in their future purchase decisions, in or- 13
14 der to force the incumbent supplier to price more competitively [Cabral and Greenstein 14
15 (1990)]⁴⁹; this strategy will generally increase the amount of switching. 15

16 In all these cases, socially costly switching in order to affect prices is inefficient to the 16
17 extent that it merely shifts rents from firms to the customer who switches. On the other 17
18 hand, if firms cannot discriminate between consumers, such switching usually lowers 18
19 prices and so improves the efficiency of other consumers' trades with sellers, so there 19
20 may then be less switching than is socially desirable. 20
21

22 (iii) *Switching costs are not real social costs* 22

23 If switching costs are contractual, and not social costs, consumers will *ceteris paribus* 23
24 switch less than is efficient. But if real (social) switching costs exist, then contractual 24
25 switching costs may prevent socially inefficient switches of the types discussed above.⁵⁰ 25
26

27 2.5.3. *Multiproduct firms* 27
28

29 A consumer who buys several products in a single period may incur additional “shop- 29
30 ping costs” for each additional supplier used. These shopping costs may be the same 30
31 as the switching costs incurred by consumers who change suppliers between periods. 31
32 However, the dynamic and commitment issues that switching-cost models usually em- 32
33 phasize no longer arise. In particular, firms and consumers can contract on all prices, 33
34 so the analogy with economies of scope in production is particularly strong.⁵¹ Thus 34
35

37 ⁴⁹ The literature has largely assumed that consumers have no commitment power (see Section 2.8 for excep- 37
38 tions). 38

39 ⁵⁰ In Fudenberg and Tirole (2000) firms endogenously offer long term contracts that create contractual 39
40 switching costs that reduce inefficient switching to less preferred products and increase social welfare, condi- 40
41 tional on firms being permitted to price discriminate between old and new customers. 41

42 ⁵¹ But some superficially single-period contexts are better understood as dynamic. For instance, supermarkets 42
43 advertise just a few “loss leaders”; unadvertised prices are chosen to be attractive once the consumer is in the 43
shop (“locked in”) but might not have drawn him in. (See Section 2.1.)

1 shopping costs provide an efficiency reason for multiproduct firms just as economies of
2 scope in production do.⁵²

3 The analogy is not perfect, because switching costs and shopping costs are based
4 on specific consumer–firm matches, whereas the production-side economies of scope
5 emphasized by Panzar and Willig (1981) and others depend only on a firm’s total sales
6 of each product and not on whether the same consumers buy the firm’s different products
7 or whether some consumers use multiple suppliers.⁵³

8 However, the analogy is particularly good if firms’ product lines are sufficiently broad
9 that most consumers use just one supplier. For example, Klemperer and Padilla (1997)
10 demonstrate that selling an additional product can provide strategic benefits for a firm in
11 the markets for its current products if consumers have shopping costs of using additional
12 suppliers (because selling an extra variety can attract demand away from rival suppliers
13 for this firm’s existing varieties). This parallels Bulow et al.’s (1985a) demonstration of
14 the same result if consumers’ shopping costs are replaced by production-side economies
15 of scope (because selling an additional variety lowers the firm’s marginal costs of its
16 existing products). In both cases each firm, and therefore the market, may therefore pro-
17 vide too many different products. More obviously, mergers can be explained either by
18 consumer switching costs [Klemperer and Padilla (1997)] or by production economies
19 of scope.

20 Some results about *single*-product competition over *many* periods with switching
21 costs carry over to *multi*-product competition in a *single* period with shopping costs. For
22 example, we suggested in Section 2.4.2 that when switching costs are learning costs,
23 oligopolists might benefit by synchronizing their sales to minimize switching and so
24 reduce the pool of highly price-sensitive (no-switching cost) customers. Likewise mul-
25 tiproduct firms competing in a single period may have a joint incentive to minimize the
26 number of consumers who buy from more than one firm. Indeed Klemperer (1992, 1995,
27 ex. 4) shows that firms may inefficiently offer similar products to each other, or similar
28 product lines to each other, for this reason. Taken together with the previous paragraph’s
29 result, this suggests that each firm may produce too many products, but that there may
30 nevertheless be too little variety produced by the industry as a whole.

31 An important set of shopping-cost models are the “mix-and-match” models pioneered
32 by Matutes and Regibeau (1988), Economides (1989) and Einhorn (1992). Most of this
33 literature takes each firm’s product-line as given, and asks whether firms prefer to be
34 compatible (no shopping costs) or incompatible (effectively infinite shopping costs);
35 see Sections 2.7.3 and 2.8.

38 ⁵² Examples include supermarkets, shopping malls, hospitals and airlines: Dranove and White (1996) models
39 hospitals as multi-product providers with switching costs between providers. Several studies document that
40 travelers strongly prefer to use a single airline for a multi-segment trip, and the importance of these demand-
41 side complementarities in air travel [e.g. Carlton, Landes and Posner (1980)].

42 ⁵³ As we noted in Section 2.1, if firms can discriminate between consumers, then each consumer becomes an
43 independent market which, in the presence of switching costs, is closely analogous to a market with produc-
tion economies of scope.

1 Similarly, when firms “bundle” products [see, e.g., Whinston (1990), Matutes and
2 Regibeau (1992), Nalebuff (2000, in press)] they are creating contractual shopping costs
3 between their products; we discuss bundling briefly in Sections 2.7.3 and 2.8.⁵⁴

4 “Shopping costs” models are distinguished from other “switching costs” models in
5 that consumers can observe and contract on all prices at the same time in the “shopping
6 costs” models. We will henceforth use the term switching costs to cover all these costs,
7 but continue to focus mainly on dynamic switching costs.

9 2.6. Battles for market share

11 2.6.1. The value of market share

12 We have seen that with switching costs (or indeed proprietary network effects – see
13 Section 3.7), a firm’s current customer base is an important determinant of its future
14 profits.

15 We can therefore write a firm’s current-period value function (i.e., total discounted
16 future profits), V_t , as the sum of its current profits, π_t , and its discounted next-period
17 value function $\delta V_{t+1}(\sigma_t)$, in which δ is the discount factor and the next-period value
18 function, $V_{t+1}(\cdot)$, is a function of the size of its current-period customer base, σ_t .

$$21 \quad V_t = \pi_t + \delta V_{t+1}(\sigma_t). \quad (2)$$

22 For example, in our core model with free entry, $V_{t+1} = s\sigma_t$, and Biglaiser, Crémer
23 and Dobos (2003) have explored various cases in which this simple formula holds.
24 More generally, however, (2) is a simplification. In general, the firm’s future profits
25 depend on its customers’ types and their full histories, how market share is distributed
26 among competing firms, how many consumers in the market make no purchase, etc.
27 However, V_{t+1} depends only on current-period market share in models such as Klem-
28 perer (1987b, 1995), Farrell and Shapiro (1988), Beggs and Klemperer (1992), Padilla
29 (1992, 1995), and Chen and Rosenthal (1996), which all model just two firms and a
30 fixed set of consumers whose reservation prices are high enough that they always pur-
31 chase. (For example, Equation (1) shows for Beggs and Klemperer’s model how prices,
32 and therefore also quantities, and hence value functions, in a period depend on the firm’s
33 previous-period market share.) So σ_t is often interpreted as “market share”, and this ex-
34 plains firms’ very strong concern with market shares in markets with switching costs
35 and/or (we shall see) network effects.⁵⁵

36
37
38
39
40 ⁵⁴ Varian’s (1989) and Stole’s (2007) surveys describe models of quantity discounts and bundling in Volume 1
41 and the current volume of this Series, respectively.

42 ⁵⁵ Because switching costs make current market share such an important determinant of a manufacturer’s
43 future profits, Valletti (2000) suggests they may provide a motive for vertical integration with retailers to
ensure sufficient investment in a base of repeat subscribers.

2.6.2. Penetration pricing

From (2), the firm's first-order condition for the optimal choice of a period- t price is

$$0 = \frac{\partial V_t}{\partial p_t} = \frac{\partial \pi_t}{\partial p_t} + \delta \frac{\partial V_{t+1}}{\partial \sigma_t} \frac{\partial \sigma_t}{\partial p_t}. \quad (3)$$

Provided that the firm's value function is increasing in its market share,⁵⁶ therefore, the firm charges a lower price or sets a higher quantity⁵⁷ than would maximize short-run profits, in order to raise its customer base and hence its future profits. That is, $\partial \pi_t / \partial p_t > 0$ (since we assume $\partial \sigma_t / \partial p_t < 0$).

In the early stages of a market, therefore, when few consumers are locked in, so even short-run profit-maximizing prices are not high relative to costs, Equation (3) implies low penetration pricing, just as in the core two-period model.^{58,59} Equation (3) also suggests that the larger the value of the future market, V_{t+1} , the deeper the penetration pricing will be. For example, a more rapidly growing market will have lower prices.⁶⁰

2.6.3. Harvesting vs investing: macroeconomic and international trade applications

As Equations (2) and (3) illustrate, the firm must balance the incentive to charge high prices to "harvest" greater current profits ((3) showed π_t is increasing in p_t) against the incentive for low prices that "invest" in market share and hence increase future profits (V_{t+1} is increasing in σ_t , which is decreasing in p_t).

Anything that increases the marginal value of market share will make the firm lower price further to invest more in market share. Thus, for example, a lower δ , that is,

⁵⁶ This case, $\partial V_{t+1} / \partial \sigma_t > 0$, seems the usual one, although in principle, stealing customers from rival(s) may make the rival(s) so much more aggressive that the firm is worse off. See Banerjee and Summers (1987), Klemperer (1987c).

In Beggs and Klemperer (1992), V_{t+1} is quadratic in σ_t . [The fact that the sum of the duopolists' value functions is therefore maximized at the boundaries is consistent with stable dynamics because lowering current price is less costly in current profits for the firm with the smaller market share. See Budd et al. (1993).]

⁵⁷ We can perform a similar analysis with similar results for a quantity-setting firm. The analysis is also unaffected by whether each firm sets a single price to all consumers or whether, as in Section 2.5, each firm sets different prices to different groups of consumers in any period.

⁵⁸ It is unclear whether we should expect "penetration pricing" patterns from a monopolist, since $\partial V_{t+1} / \partial \sigma_t$ may be smaller in monopoly – where consumers have nowhere else to go – than in oligopoly, and (if goods are durable) durable-goods effects imply falling prices in monopoly absent switching-cost effects (Equation (3) only implies that early period prices are lower than in the absence of switching-costs, not that prices necessarily rise). Cabral et al. (1999) show it is hard to obtain penetration pricing in a network-effects monopoly model (see Section 3.6).

⁵⁹ Of course, as noted in Section 2.3.2, in a more general model the "penetration" might be through advertising or other marketing activities rather than just low prices.

⁶⁰ Strictly, (3) tells us prices are lower if $\partial V_{t+1} / \partial \sigma_t$ is larger, but this is often true for a more rapidly growing market. See, for example, Beggs and Klemperer (1992), Borenstein, MacKie-Mason and Netz (2000) and also Holmes' (1990) steady-state model of a monopolist selling a single product to overlapping generations of consumers who incur set-up costs before buying the product.

1 a higher real interest rate, reduces the present value of future market share (see (2))
 2 so leads to higher current prices (see (3): lower δ implies lower $\partial\pi_t/\partial p_t$ implies higher
 3 p_t ⁶¹).

4 Chevalier and Scharfstein (1996) develop this logic in a switching-cost model based
 5 on Klemperer (1995). They argue that liquidity-constrained firms perceive very high
 6 real interest rates and therefore set high prices, sacrificing future profits in order to
 7 raise cash in the short term. They provide evidence that during recessions (when finan-
 8 cial constraints are most likely to matter) the most financially-constrained supermarket
 9 chains indeed raise their prices relative to other chains, and Campello and Fluck's (2004)
 10 subsequent empirical work shows that these effects are larger in industries where con-
 11 sumers face higher switching costs.⁶²

12 Fitoussi and Phelps (1988) use a similar logic (emphasizing search costs rather than
 13 switching costs) to argue that high interest rates contributed to the high rates of inflation
 14 in Europe in the early 1980s.

15 Froot and Klemperer (1989) also apply the same logic to international trade in a
 16 model of competition for market share motivated by switching costs and network ef-
 17 fects. A current appreciation of the domestic currency lowers a foreign firm's costs
 18 (expressed in domestic currency) and so tends to lower prices. However, if the appreci-
 19 ation is expected to be only temporary then the fact that the domestic currency will be
 20 worth less tomorrow is equivalent to an increase in the real interest rates which raises
 21 prices. So exchange-rate changes that are expected to be temporary may have very little
 22 impact on import prices. But if the currency is anticipated to appreciate in the future,
 23 both the "cost effect" and "interest-rate effect" are in the same direction – market share
 24 tomorrow is probably worth more if future costs are lower, and tomorrow's profits are
 25 worth more than today's profits, so for both reasons today is a good time to invest in
 26 market share rather than harvest current profits. So import prices may be very sensitive
 27 to anticipated exchange-rate changes. Froot and Klemperer (1989) and Sapir and Sektat
 28 (1995) provide empirical support for these theories.⁶³

29 2.7. Entry

30 Switching costs may have important effects on entry: with real, exogenous switching
 31 costs, small-scale entry to win new, unattached, consumers is often easy and indeed
 32 often too easy, but attracting even some of the old "locked-in" customers may not just
 33 be hard, but also be too hard from the social standpoint.
 34
 35
 36

37 ⁶¹ See Klemperer (1995). We assume stable, symmetric, oligopoly and that the dominant effect of lowering
 38 δ is the direct effect.

39 ⁶² See also Campello (2003). Beggs and Klemperer (1989, Section 5.3) and Klemperer (1995) provide further
 40 discussion of how "booms" and "busts" affect the trade-offs embodied in Equation (3) and hence affect price-
 41 cost margins.

42 ⁶³ For other applications of switching-costs theory to international trade, see Tivig (1996) who develops
 43 "J-curves" (since sales quantities respond only slowly to price changes if there are switching costs), Gottfries
 (2002), To (1994), and Hartigan (1995).

1 Furthermore, firms may also create unnecessary switching costs in order to discour- 1
2 age entry. 2

3 4 2.7.1. *Small-scale entry is (too) easy* 4 5

6 We saw in Section 2.4 that if firms cannot discriminate between old and new consumers, 6
7 then the “fat cat” effect may make small scale entry very easy: incumbent firms’ desire 7
8 to extract profits from their old customers creates a price umbrella under which entrants 8
9 can profitably win new unattached (or low switching cost) customers. And even after 9
10 entry has occurred, the erstwhile incumbent(s) will continue to charge higher prices than 10
11 the entrant, and lose market share to the entrant, so long as they remain “fatter” firms 11
12 with more old consumers to exploit. 12

13 So if there are no economies of scale, even an entrant that is somewhat less efficient 13
14 than the incumbent(s) can enter successfully at a small scale that attracts only unattached 14
15 buyers.⁶⁴ [See Klemperer (1987c), Farrell and Shapiro (1988), Gabszewicz, Pepall and 15
16 Thisse (1992), Wang and Wen (1998), etc.] 16

17 Of course, the flip-side of this is that the same switching costs that encourage new 17
18 entry also encourage the new entrants to remain at a relatively small scale unless there 18
19 are many unattached buyers.⁶⁵ 19
20

21 2.7.2. *Large scale entry is (too) hard* 21 22

23 While the fat-cat effect gives new entrants an advantage in competing for new cus- 23
24 tomers, it is very hard for them to compete for customers who are already attached to 24
25 an incumbent. There is also adverse selection: consumers who switch are likely to be 25
26 less loyal, hence less valuable, ones.⁶⁶ So entry may be hard if small-scale entry is im- 26
27 practical, due perhaps to economies of scale, or to network effects. Furthermore, even 27
28

29 ⁶⁴ This result depends on there being (sufficient) new customers in each period (which is a natural assump- 29
30 tion). For an analogous result that entry was easy into just one product in a shopping-cost market, there would 30
31 have to be sufficient buyers without shopping costs, or who wished to purchase just that product (this may be 31
32 a less natural assumption). Failing that, “small scale” entry in a shopping cost market is not easy. 32

33 Our assumption of no discrimination between old and new consumers means the easy-entry result also does 33
34 not apply to aftermarkets. Entry may be hard in this case if first-period prices cannot fall too low, and the 34
35 incumbent has a reputational or similar advantage. For example, the UK Office of Fair Trading found in 35
36 2001 that new entry was very hard into the hospital segment of the market served by NAPP Pharmaceutical 35
37 Holdings Ltd where prices were less than one-tenth of those in the “follow-on” community market. 36

37 ⁶⁵ Good (2006) shows that, for this reason, switching costs may lead an incumbent firm to prefer to delay 37
38 innovation and instead rely on new entrants to introduce new products which the incumbent can then imitate. 38

39 ⁶⁶ Some work on the credit card market emphasizes this adverse-selection problem: creditworthy borrowers 39
40 may have been granted high credit limits by their current card issuers so have higher switching costs. Further- 40
41 more, low-default risk customers may be less willing to switch (or even search) because they do not intend to 41
42 borrow – but they often do borrow nevertheless [Ausubel (1991)]. Calem and Mester (1995) provide empiri- 42
43 cal evidence that this adverse selection is important, Ausubel provides evidence that the U.S. bank credit card 43
44 issuing market earns positive economic profit and attributes this, at least in part, to switching costs or search 44
45 costs, and Stango (2002) also argues that switching costs are an important influence on pricing. 45

1 new consumers may be wary of buying from a new supplier if they know that it can
2 only survive at a large scale, since with switching costs consumers care about the future
3 prospects of the firms they deal with.

4 Of course, this does not imply that there is *too* little large-scale entry. If switching
5 costs are social costs, then large-scale entry may not be efficient even if the entrant's
6 production costs are modestly lower than an incumbent's. That is, to some extent these
7 obstacles to profitable large-scale entry reflect social costs of such entry.

8 However, this reflection is imperfect. If the entrant cannot discriminate between con-
9 sumers, then large-scale entry requires charging all consumers a price equal to the
10 incumbent's price less the marginal old buyer's switching cost. But socially the switch-
11 ing cost applies only to the old switching buyers, not to the new consumers, and only
12 applies to switching buyers at the average level of their switching cost, not at the mar-
13 ginal switching cost. So efficient large-scale entry may be blocked.

14 Furthermore, entry can sometimes be strategically blockaded. In particular, an in-
15 cumbent may "limit price", that is, cut price to lock in more customers and make entry
16 unprofitable at the necessary scale, when entry at the same scale would have been prof-
17 itable, and perhaps efficient, if the additional customers had not been "locked-up" prior
18 to entry [see [Klemperer \(1987c\)](#)].⁶⁷

19 Of course, entry can be too easy or too hard for more standard reasons. Entry can
20 be too hard if it expands market output, and consumers rather than the entrant capture
21 the surplus generated. And entry is too easy if its main effect is to shift profits from the
22 incumbent to the entrant.⁶⁸ But these caveats apply whether or not there are switching
23 costs; the arguments specific to switching costs suggest that entry that depends for its
24 success on consumers switching is not just hard, but too hard.

26 2.7.3. *Single-product entry may be (too) hard*

28 If switching costs (or shopping costs) "tie" sales together so consumers prefer not to
29 patronize more than one firm, and consumers wish to buy several products (see Sec-
30 tion 2.5.3), then an entrant may be forced to offer a full range of products to attract new
31 customers (let alone any old consumers). If offering a full range is impractical, entry can
32 effectively be foreclosed. Thus in [Whinston \(1990\)](#), [Nalebuff \(in press\)](#), and [Klemperer](#)

35 ⁶⁷ The incumbent's advantage is reduced if it does not know the entrant's costs, or quality, or even the prob-
36 ability or timing of entry, in advance of the entry. [Gerlach \(2004\)](#) explores the entrant's choice between
37 pre-announcing its product (so that more consumers wait to buy its product) and maintaining secrecy so that
38 the incumbent cannot limit price in response to the information.

39 ⁶⁸ [Klemperer \(1988\)](#) illustrates the latter case, showing that new entry into a mature market with switching
40 costs can sometimes be socially undesirable. The point is that just as entry of a firm whose costs exceed the
41 incumbent's is often inefficient in a standard Cournot model without switching costs [[Bulow et al., 1985a](#),
42 [Section VI E](#), [Mankiw and Whinston \(1986\)](#)] so entry of a firm whose production cost *plus* consumers'
43 switching cost exceeds the incumbent's production cost is often inefficient in a quantity-setting model with
switching costs (see footnote 48).

1 and Padilla (1997), tying can foreclose firms that can only sell single products. In Whin- 1
 2 ston and Nalebuff the “switching costs” are contractual, while in Klemperer and Padilla 2
 3 the products are “tied” by real shopping costs.⁶⁹ If the switching/shopping costs are real, 3
 4 entry need not be too hard *given* the switching costs, but the arguments of the previous 4
 5 subsection suggest it often may be. 5
 6

7 2.7.4. Artificial switching costs make entry (too) hard 7

8
 9 The previous discussion addressed whether entry is too easy or too hard, taking the 9
 10 switching costs as given: we observed that switching costs make certain kinds of entry 10
 11 hard, but that this is at least in part because they also make entry socially costly, so entry 11
 12 may not be very much *too* hard given the switching costs. A larger issue is whether the 12
 13 switching costs are inevitable real social costs. They may instead be contractual,⁷⁰ or 13
 14 may be real but caused by an unnecessary technological choice that an entrant cannot 14
 15 copy. In these cases, it is the incumbent’s ability to choose incompatibility that is the 15
 16 crucial entry barrier. 16
 17

18 2.8. Endogenous switching costs: choosing how to compete 18

19
 20 Market participants may seek to either raise or to lower switching costs in order to 20
 21 reduce inefficiencies (including the switching cost itself), to enhance market power, to 21
 22 deter new entry, or to extract returns from a new entrant. 22
 23
 24

25 2.8.1. Reducing switching costs to enhance efficiency 25

26
 27 As we have seen, a firm that cannot commit not to exploit its ex-post monopoly power 27
 28 must charge a lower introductory price. If the price-path (or quality-path) is very in- 28
 29 efficient for the firm and consumers jointly, the firm’s surplus as well as joint surplus 29
 30 may be increased by nullifying the switching costs. Thus, for example, a company may 30
 31 license a second source to create a future competitor to which consumers can costlessly 31
 32 switch [Farrell and Gallini (1988)].⁷¹ 32
 33

34 Likewise, firms producing differentiated products (or product lines) may deliberately 34
 35 make them compatible (i.e., choose zero switching costs). This increases the variety 35
 36 of options available to consumers who can then “mix-and-match” products from more 36
 37
 38

39
 40 ⁶⁹ Choi (1996a) shows that tying in markets where R&D is critical can allow a firm with an R&D lead in just 40
 41 one market to pre-empt both. The welfare effects are ambiguous. 41

42 ⁷⁰ This includes those created by “loyalty contracts”, “exclusive contracts” and “bundling” or “tying”, etc. 42

43 ⁷¹ In Gilbert and Klemperer (2000) a firm commits to low prices that will result in rationing but will not fully 43
 exploit the consumers ex-post, to induce them to pay the start-up costs of switching to the firm.

1 than one firm without paying a switching cost. So eliminating switching costs can raise
2 all firms' demands, and hence all firms' profits.⁷²

3 Where suppliers are unwilling to reduce switching costs (see below), third parties
4 may supply converters,⁷³ or regulators may intervene.

5 We have also already noted that customers may incur the switching (or start-up) cost
6 of using more than one supplier, or may pre-commit to ignoring the switching costs
7 in deciding whether to switch,⁷⁴ in order to force suppliers to behave more competi-
8 tively.⁷⁵

9 Finally, firms may be able to mitigate the inefficiencies of distorted prices and/or
10 qualities by developing reputations for behaving as if there were no switching costs.⁷⁶

12 2.8.2. *Increasing switching costs to enhance efficiency*

14 Firms may also mitigate the inefficiencies of distorted prices and qualities by contract-
15 ing, or even vertically integrating, with their customers.^{77,78} Likewise, Taylor (2003)
16 finds firms might set lower prices to loyal consumers to reduce inefficient switching.
17 Of course, a downside of these strategies of increasing switching costs is that they also
18 limit the variety available to consumers unless they pay the switching costs.

20 2.8.3. *Increasing switching costs to enhance oligopoly power*

22 Although switching costs typically reduce social surplus, we saw in Sections 2.3–2.5
23 that they nevertheless often increase firms' profits. If so, firms jointly prefer to commit
24 (before they compete) to real social switching costs than to no switching costs. Thus,
25 firms may artificially create or increase switching costs.

28 ⁷² See Matutes and Regibeau (1988), Economides (1989), Garcia Mariñoso (2001), Stahl (1982), etc. But the
29 mix-and-match models reveal other effects too; see Section 2.8.4. Note that many models ignore the demand-
30 reducing effect of switching costs by considering a fixed number of consumers all of whom have reservation
31 prices that are sufficiently high that total demand is fixed.

32 ⁷³ See Section 3.8.3 for more on converters.

33 ⁷⁴ See Cabral and Greenstein (1990).

34 ⁷⁵ Greenstein (1993) discusses the procurement strategies used by U.S. federal agencies in the late 1970s to
35 force suppliers of mainframe computers to make their systems compatible with those of their rivals.

36 ⁷⁶ See Eber (1999). Perhaps more plausibly firms may develop reputations for, or otherwise commit to,
37 treating old and new customers alike (since this behavior is easy for consumers to understand and monitor);
38 this behavior may also mitigate the inefficiencies due to the distorted prices (though see footnote 78) – it is
39 most likely to be profitable if bargain-then-ripoff pricing is particularly inefficient.

40 ⁷⁷ See Williamson (1975) and Klein, Crawford and Alchian (1978).

41 ⁷⁸ However *incomplete* contracts to protect against suppliers' opportunism may be less desirable than none
42 at all. Farrell and Shapiro (1989) call this the Principle of Negative Protection. The point is that it is better (ex
43 ante) for customers to be exploited efficiently than inefficiently ex-post. So if contracts cannot set all future
44 variables (e.g. can set prices but not qualities), so customers anyway expect to be exploited ex-post, it may be
45 better that there are no contracts.

1 Of course, a firm may prefer switching costs *from* but not *to* its product if it can 1
 2 achieve this, especially where the switching costs are real social costs. Adams (1978) 2
 3 describes how Gillette and its rivals tried to make their razor blades (the profitable 3
 4 follow-on product) fit one another's razors but their razors accept only their own blades. 4
 5 However, Koh (1993) analyses a model in which each duopolist chooses a real social 5
 6 cost of switching to it, and shows the possibility that each chooses a positive switching 6
 7 cost in order to relax competition.⁷⁹ 7

8 In Banerjee and Summers (1987) and Caminal and Matutes (1990) firms have the 8
 9 option to generate contractual switching costs by committing in period zero to offering 9
 10 repeat-purchase coupons in a two-period duopoly, and both firms (independently) take 10
 11 this option.⁸⁰ Similarly Fudenberg and Tirole (2000) explore a two-period model in 11
 12 which firms can price discriminate between consumers based on their past demands; if 12
 13 firms can also offer long term contracts – that is, generate contractual switching costs – 13
 14 then firms do offer such contracts in equilibrium, in addition to spot contracts.⁸¹ 14
 15

16 2.8.4. Reducing switching costs to enhance oligopoly power 16

17
 18 An important class of models which suggests that firms may often be biased towards 18
 19 too much compatibility from the social viewpoint is the “mix-and-match” models (see 19
 20 Section 2.5) in which different firms have different abilities in producing the different 20
 21 components of a “system”. Consumers’ ability to mix-and-match the best product(s) 21
 22 offered by each firm is an efficiency gain from compatibility (that is, from zero rather 22
 23 than infinite shopping costs), but firms’ private gains from compatibility may be even 23
 24 greater because – perhaps surprisingly – compatibility can increase prices. 24

25 In the simplest such model, Einhorn (1992) assumed that a single consumer wants one 25
 26 each of a list of components produced by firms A, B, with production costs a_i and b_i 26
 27 respectively for component i . In compatible competition the price for each component 27
 28 is $\max\{a_i, b_i\}$, so the consumer pays a total price $\sum_i \max\{a_i, b_i\}$ for the system. But if 28
 29 the firms are incompatible, the Bertrand price for a system is $\max\{\sum_i a_i, \sum_i b_i\}$ which 29
 30 is lower unless the same firm is best at everything: if different firms are best at provid- 30
 31 ing different components, then the winning seller on each component appropriates its 31
 32 full efficiency margin in compatible competition, but in incompatible competition the 32
 33 winner's margin is its efficiency advantage where it is best, *minus* its rival's advantage 33
 34 where its rival is best. Firms thus (jointly) more than appropriate the efficiency gain 34
 35 from compatibility, and consumers actually prefer incompatibility. 35

36 This result depends on (among other assumptions) duopoly at each level. If more 36
 37 than two firms produce each component, the sum of the second-lowest cost of each 37
 38

39
 40 ⁷⁹ Similarly Bouckaert and Degryse (2004) show in a two-period credit market model that each bank may 40
 41 reduce switching costs *from* itself, in order to relax competition. 41

42 ⁸⁰ However, Kim and Koh (2002) find that a firm with a small market share may reduce contractual switching 42
 43 costs by choosing to honor repeat-purchase coupons that its rivals have offered to their old customers. 43

⁸¹ These papers are discussed in more detail elsewhere in this Volume, in Stole (2007).

1 component (which the consumer pays under compatibility) may easily be lower than 1
 2 the second-lowest system cost when firms are incompatible, so consumers often prefer 2
 3 compatibility and firms' incentives may be biased either way [see Farrell, Monroe and 3
 4 Saloner (1998)].⁸² 4

5 The "order-statistic" effect emphasized in these models is not the only force, how- 5
 6 ever. Matutes and Regibeau (1988) stressed that under compatibility a price cut by one 6
 7 firm in one component increases demand for the *other* firms' complements, whereas 7
 8 under incompatibility all of this boost in complementary demand accrues to the firm, so 8
 9 compatibility reduces incentives to cut prices.⁸³ Economides (1989) argued that, unlike 9
 10 the Einhorn result, this logic does not depend on duopoly, so provides a clear argument 10
 11 why firms may try too hard to reduce switching costs and shopping costs.⁸⁴ 11
 12 12

13 2.8.5. Increasing switching costs to prevent or exploit entry 13 14 14

15 The mix-and-match literature of the previous subsection ignores the fact that entry 15
 16 provides a much greater discipline on prices when compatibility means a new firm can 16
 17 enter offering just one component of a system than when any entrant needs to offer a 17
 18 whole system. 18

19 More generally, we have seen (Section 2.7) that an incumbent firm may protect a 19
 20 monopoly position against entry by writing exclusionary contracts, or by artificially 20
 21 creating real switching costs through technological incompatibility with potential en- 21
 22 trants.⁸⁵ Imposing contractual switching costs (but not real social switching costs) can 22
 23 23

24 82 Einhorn's results, but not those of Farrell, Monroe and Saloner, are qualitatively unaffected by whether 24
 25 or not firms know their own efficiencies in each component. The analysis of these two papers is related to 25
 26 Palfrey (1983). 26

27 83 Matutes and Regibeau (1992) allowed firms to set separate prices for bundles (not necessarily the sum 27
 28 of the component prices) and found that the force toward compatibility weakens. Furthermore, compatibility 28
 29 also changes the structure of demand, so even Matutes and Regibeau (1988) found that firms are sometimes 29
 30 biased towards incompatibility. And Klemperer (1992) also shows that firms may prefer incompatibility to 30
 31 compatibility when the latter is socially preferred, and that the firms may even distort their product choices to 31
 32 sustain incompatibility. Garcia Mariñoso (2001) examines a mix-and-match model in which purchase takes 32
 33 place over two periods, and finds that firms are biased towards compatibility because it reduces the intensity of 33
 34 competition in the first period – see also Haucap (2003) and Garcia Mariñoso (2003). (All these models, unlike 34
 35 Einhorn and Farrell, Monroe and Saloner, assume some product differentiation between firms' components 35
 36 even under compatibility.) See also Anderson and Leruth (1993). 36

37 84 Most of the "mix-and-match" literature assumes that each firm offers a full line of products, but DeNicolò 37
 38 (2000) analyzes competition with one full-line and a pair of specialist firms. In our terminology, there are then 38
 39 no additional shopping costs of buying from an additional specialist firm after having bought from one of the 39
 40 specialist firms, but the specialist firms do not internalize the complementarities between them. 40

41 85 Imposing switching costs would not be worthwhile for the incumbent if they reduced consumers' will- 41
 42 ingnesses to pay by more than the gains from excluding entry. In models such as Rasmusen, Ramseyer and 42
 43 Wiley (1991), and Segal and Whinston (2000), it is unprofitable to enter and serve only one customer, so no 43
 44 customer loses by signing an exclusive contract if other customers have already done so; in equilibrium this 44
 45 can mean that no customer needs to be compensated for signing an exclusive contract. 45

46 Detering entry is also profitable if it can transfer rents from an entrant to the incumbent. 46

1 also enable an incumbent to extract rents from an entrant without preventing its entry – 1
 2 the entrant is forced to pay a fee (the “liquidated damages”) to break the contracts.⁸⁶ 2
 3 3

4 2.9. Switching costs and policy 4 5 5

6 As we have seen, with (large) switching costs firms compete over streams of goods and 6
 7 services rather than over single transactions. So one must not jump from the fact that 7
 8 buyers become locked in to the conclusion that there is an overall competitive prob- 8
 9 lem. Nor should one draw naïve inferences from individual transaction prices, as if each 9
 10 transaction were the locus of ordinary competition. Some individual transactions may 10
 11 be priced well above cost even when no firm has (ex-ante) market power; others may be 11
 12 priced below cost without being in the least predatory.^{87,88} Thus switching-cost markets 12
 13 can be more competitive than they look, and switching costs need not generate super- 13
 14 normal profits, even in a closed oligopoly. These points emerge clearly from the core 14
 15 two-period model with which we began. 15

16 But, as our further discussion shows, while switching costs need not cause compet- 16
 17 itive problems, they probably do make competition more fragile, especially when they 17
 18 coexist with ordinary scale economies (or, as we will see in Section 3, with network 18
 19 effects). Because large-scale entry into switching-cost markets is hard (whether or not 19
 20 inefficiently so), there may be much more incentive for monopolizing strategies such 20
 21 as predation or merger than there is in markets in which easy entry limits any market 21
 22 power. Thus switching costs, in combination with other factors, could justify heightened 22
 23 antitrust scrutiny.⁸⁹ 23

24 Furthermore, while sometimes (as in our core model) firms must give all their ex post 24
 25 rents to consumers in ex ante competition, that is not always true. The ex post rents may 25
 26 be less than fully competed away, as in most of the oligopoly models we discussed. Or, 26
 27 27

28 28
 29 ⁸⁶ See Aghion and Bolton (1987) and Diamond and Maskin (1979). 29

30 ⁸⁷ For instance, in an aftermarket context such as the Kodak case, the fact that repair services are priced well 30
 31 above cost does not by itself prove that there is a serious competitive problem. 31

32 ⁸⁸ Another naïve argument is that if one observes little or no switching, then firms do not constrain one 32
 33 another’s prices: firms that compete on a life-cycle basis (rather than on an individual transaction basis) 33
 34 constrain one another’s life-cycle prices and, of course, firms may be constrained even ex post by the threat 34
 35 of customer switching even when that threat is not carried out in equilibrium. 35

36 ⁸⁹ For example, the UK Competition Commission in July 2001 blocked the proposed merger of two banks, 36
 37 Lloyds TSB and Abbey National, even though Abbey National accounted for only 5 per cent of the market 37
 38 for personal banking. An important part of the Commission’s reasoning was that consumer switching costs, 38
 39 combined with some scale economies, make new entry very hard, and that existing firms with low market 39
 40 shares tend to compete more aggressively than larger firms in markets with switching costs, so smaller firms 40
 41 are particularly valuable competitors to retain. (Klemperer is a UK Competition Commissioner, but was not 41
 42 involved in this decision.) See also Lofaro and Ridyrd (2003). 42

43 Footnote 64 gives another example where policy makers were concerned that entry was very hard in a market 43
 with switching costs. In this case the UK regulator (the Director of the Office of Fair Trading) limited NAPP’s 43
 aftermarket price to no more than five times the foremarket price in order to ameliorate the bargains-then- 43
 ripoffs price pattern. (He also limited the absolute level of the aftermarket price.) 43

1 if the ex post rents are dissipated in unproductive activities such as excessive marketing 1
 2 or advertising, then consumers are harmed by switching costs even if firms are no better 2
 3 off. So switching costs often do raise average prices. Moreover, as in our core model, 3
 4 switching costs often cause a bargain-then-ripoff pattern of prices, and (going beyond 4
 5 the core model) this can be inefficient even when the average level of prices remains 5
 6 competitive; they make matching less efficient by discouraging re-matching or the use of 6
 7 multiple suppliers; and, of course, they result in direct costs when consumers do switch. 7

8 For these reasons, despite the warnings in the first paragraph of this subsection, 8
 9 markets may indeed perform less well with switching costs than without, so policy 9
 10 intervention to reduce switching costs may be appropriate.⁹⁰ For example, policy might 10
 11 cautiously override intellectual property rights, especially of copyright-like intellectual 11
 12 property that may have little inherent novelty, if those rights are used only as a tool to 12
 13 enforce incompatibility and so create private rewards that bear no relationship to the 13
 14 innovation's incremental value.⁹¹ 14

15 In general firms may be biased either towards or against compatibility relative to the 15
 16 social standpoint. But switching costs seem more likely to lower than to raise efficiency, 16
 17 so when firms favor switching costs the reason is often because they enhance monopoly 17
 18 or oligopoly power by directly raising prices or by inhibiting new entry.⁹² This suggests 18
 19 that policy-makers should take a close look when firms with market power choose to 19
 20 have switching costs (through contract form or product design) when choosing compat- 20
 21 ibility would be no more costly.^{93,94} 21
 22 22

23 ⁹⁰ Gans and King (2001) examine the regulatory trade-offs in intervening to reduce switching costs and show 23
 24 that who is required to bear the costs of ameliorating switching costs can importantly affect the efficiency of 24
 25 the outcome. See also Galbi (2001). 25

26 Viard (in press) found that the introduction of number portability for U.S. toll-free telephone services sub- 26
 27 stantially reduced switching costs and led to the largest firm substantially reducing prices; the U.S. wireless 27
 28 industry strongly resisted the introduction of number portability in the wireless market. Aoki and Small (2000) 28
 29 and Gans, King and Woodbridge (2001) also analyse number portability in the telecoms market. 29

30 The UK government is currently considering recommendations to reduce switching costs in the mortgage 30
 31 market, see Miles (2004). 31

32 ⁹¹ Thus, for example, the European Commission in 2004 ruled that Microsoft had abused its market power 32
 33 by, inter alia, refusing to supply interface infrastructure to competitors, thus making entry hard by products 33
 34 that could form part of a "mix-and-match" system with Microsoft's dominant Windows PC operating system. 34
 35 Microsoft was ordered to provide this information even if it was protected by intellectual property. 35

36 ⁹² A caveat is that firms often do not make a coordinated joint choice of whether to compete with switching 36
 37 costs or without, and different firms may be able to control the costs of different switches. See Section 2.8. 37

38 ⁹³ For example, the Swedish competition authority argued that Scandinavian Airlines' "frequent-flyer" pro- 38
 39 gram blocked new entry on just one or a few routes in the Swedish domestic air-travel market in which entry 39
 40 on the whole range of routes was impractical (see Section 2.7.3), and the airline was ordered to alter the pro- 40
 41 gram from October 2001. A similar decision was made by the Norwegian competition authority with effect 41
 42 from April 2002. Fernandes (2001) provides some support for these decisions by studying alliances formed 42
 43 by U.S. airlines, and showing that "frequent-flyer" programs that cover more routes are more attractive to 43
 44 consumers and confer greater market power on the airlines operating the programs. See also Klemperer and 44
 45 Png (1986). 45

46 ⁹⁴ A caveat is that the policy debate is often held ex-post of some lock-in. At this point incumbents' pref- 46
 47 erence to maintain high switching costs is unsurprising and does not prove that switching costs raise prices 47

3. Network effects and competition

3.1. Introduction

It can pay to coordinate and follow the crowd. For instance, it is useful to speak English because many others do. A telephone or a fax machine or an email account is more valuable if many others have them. Driving is easier if everyone keeps right – or if everyone keeps left. While following the crowd may involve a variety of choices, we follow the literature in using the metaphor of “adoption of a good”, construed broadly. We say that there are *network effects* if one agent’s adoption of a good (a) benefits other adopters of the good (a “total effect”) and (b) increases others’ incentives to adopt it (a “marginal effect”).

Classic (or *peer-to-peer*) *network effects* arise when every adoption thus complements every other, although the effects may be “localized”: for instance, an instant-messaging user gains more when her friends adopt than when strangers do. Indeed, adoption by spammers or telemarketers harms other adopters and makes them less keen to adopt, yet a few such nuisance adopters will not overturn the overall network effect: “generally” increased adoption makes the good more appealing.

An important kind of network effect arises when following the crowd enhances opportunities to trade. If thicker markets work better, then all traders want to join (adopt) a big market, and gain when the market grows. This fits the definition if each trader expects both to buy and to sell; but when traders can be divided into buyers and sellers, it is not true that each trader’s arrival makes all others better off or encourages them to adopt. Each buyer gains when more sellers join, but typically loses when more other buyers join: he does not want to trade with them and may suffer an adverse terms-of-trade effect. Thus the effect of a buyer’s adoption on sellers fits the definition above, as does the effect of a seller’s adoption on buyers, but the buyer–buyer spillovers and the seller–seller spillovers often go the other way. *Indirect network effects* describe market-thickness effects from one side of the market, typically buyers, as the other side re-equilibrates. That is, when an additional buyer arrives, the “marginal effect” on sellers attracts additional sellers, and the total and marginal effects of additional sellers on buyers can then be attributed (indirectly, hence the name) to the additional buyer. If those effects outweigh any adverse terms-of-trade effect of the new buyer on other buyers, they induce network effects among buyers, treating sellers not as adopters subject to the definition but as a mere background mechanism.

This can all take place in terms of just one good. For instance, a firm’s price policies create a network effect among buyers if price falls when demand rises. This can reflect production-side *economies of scale* if those are passed through to consumers.

overall (nor do the switching costs necessarily cause inefficiencies). Reducing switching costs ex-post also expropriates the incumbents’ ex-ante investments, which may be thought objectionable, though the fear of expropriation of this kind of ex-ante investment seems unlikely to harm dynamic efficiency (and may in fact improve efficiency).

1 For example, if public transport is always priced at average cost, it gets cheaper the 1
 2 more it is used. Similarly, Bagwell and Ramey (1994) and Bagwell (2007) show how 2
 3 economies of scale in retailing can encourage consumers to coordinate (perhaps by re- 3
 4 sponding to advertising) on large retailers. With or without scale economies, a firm's 4
 5 price policy can create an artificial network effect among buyers, as when a mobile- 5
 6 phone provider offers subscribers free calls to other subscribers. If a product will be 6
 7 abandoned without sufficient demand, one can view that as a price increase; thus buyers 7
 8 who will face switching costs want to buy a product that enough others will buy [Beggs 8
 9 (1989)]. At the industry rather than firm level, there may be price-mediated network 9
 10 effects in decreasing-cost competitive industries; or a larger market may support more 10
 11 sellers and thus be more competitive [Rasmusen, Ramseyer and Wiley, 1991; Segal and 11
 12 Whinston (2000)] or more productively efficient [Stigler (1951)]. 12

13 But, usually, the concept gets an additional layer: the background mechanism is re- 13
 14 equilibration of sellers of *varied complements* to a “platform” that buyers adopt. For 14
 15 instance, when more buyers adopt a computer hardware platform, more vendors supply 15
 16 software that will run on it, making the computer (with the option to buy software for it) 16
 17 more valuable to users: the hardware–software paradigm.⁹⁵ Similarly, buyers may want 17
 18 to buy a popular car because a wider (geographic and other) variety of mechanics will 18
 19 be trained to repair it, or may hesitate to buy one that uses a less widely available fuel. 19
 20 We give more examples in Section 3.2 and discuss indirect network effects further in 20
 21 Section 3.3.2.⁹⁶ 21

22 While such indirect network effects are common – indeed, Rochet and Tirole (2003) 22
 23 argue that network effects predominantly arise in this way – it is worth warning against 23
 24 a tempting short-cut in the logic. Even in classic competitive markets, “sellers like there 24
 25 to be more buyers, and buyers like there to be more sellers”, and this does not imply 25
 26 network effects if these effects are pecuniary and cancel one another. Indirect network 26
 27 effects driven by smooth free entry of sellers in response to additional buyers can only 27
 28 work when larger markets are more efficient, as we discuss further in Section 3.3.5. 28

29 Section 3.2 describes some case studies and empirical work. Section 3.3, like the 29
 30 early literature, explores whether network effects are externalities and cause network 30
 31 goods to be under-adopted at the margin, a question that draws primarily on the total 31
 32 effect. But the modern literature focuses on how the marginal effect can create multiple 32
 33 equilibria among adopters, making coordination challenging and giving expectations 33
 34 34

35 ⁹⁵ Somewhat confusingly, a leading example puts Microsoft's Windows in the role of “hardware” and appli- 35
 36 cations software in the role of “software”. 36

37 ⁹⁶ For theories of indirect network effects through improved supply in a complement see Katz and Shapiro 37
 38 (1985), Church and Gandal (1992, 1993), Chou and Shy (1990), and Economides and Salop (1992); Gandal 38
 39 (1995a) and Katz and Shapiro (1994) review this literature. Liebowitz and Margolis (1994) argue that indirect 39
 40 network effects lack the welfare properties of direct effects; see also Clements (2004); but Church, Gandal 40
 41 and Krause (2002) argue otherwise. 41

42 Presumably we could have network effects with several classes of adopter, each class benefiting only from 42
 43 adoption by one other class, but in practice models tend to assume either classic (single-class) or indirect 43
 (two-class) cases, although multi-component systems are sometimes studied.

1 a key role in competition and efficiency. As a result, network markets often display 1
 2 unstable dynamics such as critical mass, tipping, and path dependence, including col- 2
 3 lective switching costs. Section 3.4 argues that coordination is central and can be hard 3
 4 even despite helpful institutions. Section 3.5 discusses how adoption in network mar- 4
 5 kets favors the status quo; such “inertia” has important implications for competition. 5
 6 Sections 3.3–3.5 thus study adopters’ collective behavior, given their payoff functions 6
 7 including prices. Those sections thus describe adoption dynamics when each network 7
 8 good is unsponsored (competitively supplied), and also describe the demand side gen- 8
 9 erally, including when each network good is strategically supplied by a single residual 9
 10 claimant or sponsor. 10

11 Turning to the supply side of network-effect markets, Section 3.6 discusses how a 11
 12 sponsor might address coordination and externality problems; Section 3.7 considers 12
 13 competition between sponsors of incompatible network products. In light of this analy- 13
 14 sis of incompatible competition, Section 3.8 asks whether firms will choose to compete 14
 15 with compatible or incompatible products, and Section 3.9 discusses public policy. 15
 16

17 3.2. Empirical evidence 17

18 3.2.1. Case studies 18

19 We discuss some of the most prominent cases in which it has been argued that network 19
 20 effects are important: 20
 21

22 *Telecommunications* Much early literature on network effects was inspired by 21
 23 telecommunications. Since telecommunications at the time was treated as a natural 22
 24 monopoly, the focus was mainly on how second-best pricing might take account of net- 23
 25 work effects/externalities, and on how to organize “universal service” cross-subsidies 24
 26 to marginal (or favored) users.⁹⁷ 25
 27

28 Modern telecommunications policy stresses facilitating efficient competition. Com- 26
 29 patibility in the form of interconnection, so that a call originated on one network can 27
 30 be completed on another, is fundamental to this.⁹⁸ Unlike many compatibility decisions 28
 31 elsewhere, it is often paid for, and is widely regulated. Brock (1981) and Gabel (1991) 29
 32 describe how, in early unregulated U.S. telephone networks, the dominant Bell system 30
 33 refused to interconnect with nascent independent local phone companies. Some users 31
 34 then subscribed to both carriers, somewhat blunting the network effects, as do similar 32
 35 “multi-homing” practices such as merchants accepting several kinds of payment cards. 33
 36

37
 38
 39
 40 ⁹⁷ See for instance (in chronological order) Squire (1973), Rohlfs (1974), Kahn and Shew (1987), Einhorn 39
 41 (1993), Panzar and Wildman (1995), Barnett and Kaserman (1998), Crémer (2000), Yannelis (2001), Mason 40
 42 and Valletti (2001), Gandal, Salant and Waverman (2003) and also Shy (2001). 41

42 ⁹⁸ Besen and Saloner (1989, 1994) studied standards and network effects in telecommunications; the Inter- 42
 43 national Telecommunications Union (ITU) has an entire “standardization sector”. 43

Standards issues also arise in mobile telephony, although users on incompatible standards can call one another. Most countries standardized first- and second-generation air interfaces, predominantly on GSM, but the U.S. did not set a compulsory standard for the second-generation air interface.

Radio and television Besen and Johnson (1986) discuss standards obstacles to the adoption of AM stereo in the U.S. after the government declined to mandate a standard; they argue that the competing standards were similar enough, and demand limited enough, for such a leadership vacuum to stall the technology. Greenstein and Rysman (2004) give a similar interpretation of the early history of 56kbps modem standards.

In television, governments have imposed standards, but they differ among countries; Crane (1979) interprets this as protectionist trade policy. Besen and Johnson describe how the U.S. initially adopted a color TV standard that was not backward compatible with its black-and-white standard, so that color broadcasts could not be viewed at all on the installed base of sets; after brief experience with this, the FCC adopted a different standard that was backward-compatible. Farrell and Shapiro (1992) discuss domestic and international processes of picking high-definition television standards.

Microsoft Powerful network effects arise in computer platforms including operating systems, and Bresnahan (2001b) argues that internal strategy documents confirm that Microsoft understands this very well. Because they have many users, Microsoft's operating system platforms attract a lot of applications programming. An indirect network effect arises because application software writers make it their first priority to work well with the dominant platform, although many applications are "ported" (a form of multi-homing), softening this effect. As we explore below, incompatible competition (and entry in particular) may well be weak *unless* applications programmers, consumers, and equipment manufacturers would rapidly coordinate and switch to any slightly better or cheaper operating system.⁹⁹

The U.S. antitrust case against Microsoft relied on this network effect or "applications barrier to entry", but did not claim that Windows is "the wrong" platform. Rather, Microsoft was convicted of illegal acts meant to preserve the network barrier against potential weakening through the Netscape browser and independent "middleware" such as Java.¹⁰⁰

⁹⁹ A barrier to incompatible entry matters most if there is also a barrier (here, intellectual property and secrecy) to compatible entry.

¹⁰⁰ Both the Department of Justice and Microsoft have made many documents available on their web sites, <http://www.usdoj.gov/atf/> and <http://www.microsoft.com/>, respectively. A good introduction to the case is the 2001 decision of the DC Court of Appeals. A discussion by economists involved in the case is Evans et al. (2000); Fisher (2000) and Schmalensee (2000) give briefer discussions. See also Evans and Schmalensee (2001), Gilbert and Katz (2001), Whinston (2001) and Rubinfeld (2003). Werden (2001) discusses the applications barrier to entry. Lemley and McGowan (1998b) discuss Java, and Gandal (2001) discusses the Internet search market. (Farrell worked on this case for the Justice Department.)

1 Others complain that Microsoft vertically “leverages” control from the operating system to other areas, such as applications and servers. The European Commission’s 2004
2 order against Microsoft addressed both leverage into media viewers and interface standards
3 between PCs and servers. 4

5 In software more generally, Shurmer (1993) uses survey data and finds network effects
6 in word processing and spreadsheet software; Liebowitz and Margolis (2001)
7 however argue that product quality largely explains success. Gawer and Henderson
8 (2005) discuss Intel’s response to opportunities for leverage. 9

10 *Computers* Gabel (1991) contrasts case studies of standards in personal computers
11 and in larger systems. In personal computers, initial fragmentation was followed by the
12 rise of the IBM/Windows/Intel (or “Wintel”) model, whose control passed from IBM
13 to Intel and Microsoft. The standard, which lets many firms complement the micro-
14 processor and operating system (and to a lesser extent lets others, such as AMD and
15 Linux, compete with those), has thrived, in part due to the attraction of scale for appli-
16 cations software vendors and others, and relatedly due to the scope for specialization:
17 see Gates, Myrsvold and Rinearson (1995), Grove (1996), and Langlois (1992). Outside
18 this standard only Apple has thrived. 19

20 *Credit cards* From the cardholder side, a credit card system has indirect network effects
21 if cardholders like having more merchants accept the card and do not mind having
22 more other cardholders. The question is more subtle on the merchant side since (given
23 the number of cardholders) each merchant loses when more other merchants accept a
24 card. Since this negative “total effect” applies whether or not this merchant accepts the
25 card, Katz (2001) and Rochet and Tirole (2002) show that the “marginal effect” (adop-
26 tion encourages others to adopt) may apply but the total effect may fail even taking into
27 account re-equilibration on the customer side, if card penetration is already high and
28 total spending does not rise much with cardholding. 29

30 Network effects color inter-system competition, and dominant systems could remain
31 dominant partly through self-fulfilling expectations, although both merchants and
32 cardholders often “multi-home”, accepting or carrying multiple cards, which weakens
33 network effects [Rochet and Tirole (2003)]. The biggest card payment systems, Visa
34 and Mastercard, have in the past been largely non-profit at the system level and feature
35 intra-system competition: multiple banks “issue” cards to customers and “acquire”
36 merchants to accept the cards. The systems’ rules affect the balance between inter- and
37 intra-system competition. Ramsey-style pricing to cardholders and merchants may require
38 “interchange fees”, typically paid by merchants’ banks to cardholders’ banks: see,
39 e.g., Katz (2001), Schmalensee (2002) and Rochet and Tirole (2002). But such fees (es-
40 specially together with rules against surcharges on card purchases) may raise prices to
41 non-card customers [Schwartz and Vincent (2006), Farrell (2006)]. 42

42 *The QWERTY keyboard* David (1985) argued that the QWERTY typewriter keyboard
43 became dominant through “historical small events”. He suggested that QWERTY re- 43

1 mains dominant despite being inferior (at least on a clean-slate basis) to other keyboard 1
 2 designs, notably the “Dvorak Simplified Keyboard” (DSK). Switching costs arise be- 2
 3 cause it is costly to re-learn how to type. Network effects may arise “directly” because 3
 4 typists like to be able to type on others’ keyboards, and “indirectly” for various reasons, 4
 5 e.g. because typing schools tend to teach the dominant design. 5

6 Liebowitz and Margolis (1990, 2001) deny that QWERTY has been shown to be 6
 7 substantially inferior, claiming that the technical evidence is mixed, weak, or suggests 7
 8 a relatively small inferiority – perhaps a few percent. If the penalty is small, switch- 8
 9 ing (retraining) could be privately inefficient for already-trained QWERTY typists *even* 9
 10 *without* network effects. And evidently few users find it worth switching given all the 10
 11 considerations *including* any network effects. 11

12 But new users (who would not have to re-train from QWERTY) would find it worth 12
 13 adopting DSK or another alternative, *if* network effects did not outweigh their clean- 13
 14 slate stand-alone advantages. Combined with the technical evidence, this gives a lower 14
 15 bound on the strength of these network effects. If most typists type for a fifth of their 15
 16 working time and QWERTY has a stand-alone disadvantage of 5 percent, for instance, 16
 17 revealed preference of new QWERTY students suggests that the network effect is worth 17
 18 at least one percent of earnings.¹⁰¹ Yet many would doubt that network effects are terri- 18
 19 bly strong in keyboard design: most typists work mostly on their own keyboards or their 19
 20 employer’s, and DSK training and keyboards are available (PC keyboards can be repro- 20
 21 programmed). We infer that even easily disparaged network effects can be powerful.¹⁰² 21

22 But the efficiency of typing is mostly a parable; the deeper question is whether the 22
 23 market test is reliable. That question splits into two: 23
 24

25 (a) *Ex ante*: did QWERTY pass a good market test when the market tipped to it? Can 25
 26 we infer that it was best when adopted, whether or not it remains *ex post* efficient 26
 27 now? A short-run form of this question is whether contemporary users liked QWERTY 27
 28 best among keyboards on offer; a long-run version is whether the market outcome ap- 28
 29 propriately took into account that not all keyboards had been tried and that taste and 29
 30 technology could (and later did) change. 30

31 On the short-run question, David suggests that “small” accidents of history had dis- 31
 32 proportionate effects; a prominent typing contest was won by an especially good typist 32
 33 who happened to use QWERTY. He suggests that the outcome was somewhat *random* 33
 34

35
 36 ¹⁰¹ Since widespread dissemination of the PC, many typists type less than this; but for most of the keyboard’s 36
 37 history, most typing probably was done by typists or secretaries who probably typed more than this. 37

38 ¹⁰² If one were very sure that network effects are weak, one might instead infer that the clean-slate stand- 38
 39 alone penalty of QWERTY must be small indeed, even negative. Even aside from the ergonomic evidence, 39
 40 however, that view is hard to sustain. For instance, the keyboard design problem differs among languages and 40
 41 has changed over time, yet QWERTY and minor variations thereof have been persistently pervasive. Thus if 41
 42 network effects were unimportant, the evidence from new typists’ choices would imply that QWERTY was 42
 43 remarkably optimal in a wide range of contexts. And even if QWERTY is actually the best of all designs, the 43
 many people who believe otherwise would adopt DSK if they did not perceive network effects to be bigger.

1 and thus may well have failed even the short-run test. Liebowitz and Margolis argue 1
 2 that because both typing-contest and market competition among keyboards was vigor- 2
 3 ous, one can presume that the outcome served short-run contemporary tastes. 3

4 A fortiori, David presumably doubts that the market's one-time choice of QWERTY 4
 5 properly took long-run factors into account. Liebowitz and Margolis do not directly ad- 5
 6 dress the long-run question, but suggest that it should not be viewed as a market failure 6
 7 if QWERTY won because technically superior alternatives were not yet on the mar- 7
 8 ket.¹⁰³ In Sections 3.5–3.7 below we discuss market forces toward contemporaneous 8
 9 efficiency. 9

10
 11 (b) *Ex post: as of now, would a switch be socially efficient?* Many students of keyboard 11
 12 design believe DSK is better on a clean-slate basis. But the slate is not clean: there is 12
 13 a huge installed base of equipment and training. As things stand, no switch is taking 13
 14 place; should one? This question in turn can take two different forms. 14

15 In a *gradual switch*, new users would adopt DSK while trained QWERTY typists 15
 16 remained with QWERTY. This would sacrifice network benefits but not incur individual 16
 17 switching costs; it would presumably happen without intervention if switching costs 17
 18 were large but network effects were weak compared to DSK's stand-alone advantage. 18
 19 Private incentives for a gradual switch can be too weak ("excess inertia") because early 19
 20 switchers bear the brunt of the lost network benefits (see Section 3.5 below). But equally 20
 21 the private incentives can be too strong, because those who switch ignore lost network 21
 22 benefits to those who are stranded. 22

23 In a *coordinated switch*, everyone would adopt DSK at once (already-trained QW- 23
 24 ERTY typists would retrain). Thus society would incur switching costs but preserve full 24
 25 network effects. Because new users would unambiguously gain, already-trained QW- 25
 26 ERTY typists will be too reluctant to participate. Even if they were willing, coordination 26
 27 (to preserve full network benefits) could be a challenge; if they were opposed, compul- 27
 28 sion or smooth side payments could be required for an efficient coordinated switch; of 28
 29 course, compulsion can easily lead to inefficient outcomes, and side payments seem 29
 30 unlikely to be smooth here. 30

31
 32 *Video recordings: Betamax versus VHS; DVD and DIVX* Gabel (1991) and Rohlfs 32
 33 (2001) argue that the VCR product overcame the chicken-and-egg problem by offering 33
 34 substantial stand-alone value to consumers (for "time-shifting" or recording programs 34
 35 off the air) even with no pre-recorded programming for rent. By contrast, RCA and CBS 35
 36 introduced products to play pre-recorded programming (into which they were vertically 36
 37 integrated), but those failed partly because they did not offer time-shifting; laser disks 37
 38 suffered the same fate. 38

39 Later, the VCR market tipped, generally to VHS and away from Betamax – though 39
 40 Gabel reports that (as of 1991) Betamax had won in Mexico. The video rental market 40
 41

42
 43 ¹⁰³ Below, we discuss what institutions might have supported a long-run market test. 43

1 created network effects (users value variety and convenience of programming availabil- 1
 2 ity, rental outlets offer more variety in a popular format, and studios are most apt to 2
 3 release videos in such a format). The rise of these network effects hurt Sony, whose Be- 3
 4 tamax standard was more expensive (VHS was more widely licensed) and, according 4
 5 to some, superior at equal network size, although [Liebowitz and Margolis \(1994\)](#) argue 5
 6 not. [Gabel \(1991\)](#) suggests that the strength of network effects may have surprised Sony. 6

7 [Cusumano, Mylonadis and Rosenbloom \(1992\)](#) describe the VHS–Betamax battle. 7
 8 [Park \(2004b\)](#) and [Ohashi \(2003\)](#) develop dynamic model of consumer choice and 8
 9 producer pricing for the VCR market and assess the extent to which network effects 9
 10 contributed to the tipping. 10

11 In the next generation of video, [Dranove and Gandal \(2003\)](#) and [Karaca-Mandic 11
 12 \(2004\)](#) found substantial indirect network effects in DVD adoption. Dranove and Gandal 12
 13 found that a preannouncement of a competing format, DIVX, delayed DVD adoption. 13
 14 Both papers find cross-effects such that the content sector as a whole could profitably 14
 15 have subsidized hardware sales, which could motivate vertical integration. 15

16 DVD players (until recently) did not record, like the laser disk product, but many 16
 17 households are willing to own both a VCR and a DVD player, allowing DVD’s other 17
 18 quality advantages to drive success in a way that the laser disk could not. Again, such 18
 19 multi-homing blunts the network effects and can help with the chicken-and-egg prob- 19
 20 lem. 20
 21

22 *Sound recordings and compact disks* [Farrell and Shapiro \(1992\)](#) argued that although 22
 23 prices of CDs and players fell during the period of rapid adoption, it would be hard to 23
 24 explain the adoption path without network effects; on the other hand, since CD players 24
 25 could be connected to existing amplifiers and loudspeakers, multi-homing was easy. 25
 26

27 [Gandal, Kende and Rob \(2000\)](#) estimated a simultaneous-equations model of adop- 27
 28 tion in terms of price and software availability, stressing the cross-effects that would 28
 29 lead to indirect network effects. 29
 30

31 *Languages* Human languages display classic network effects. Changes in patterns of 31
 32 who talks with whom presumably explain the evolution of language, both convergent 32
 33 (dialects merging into larger languages) and divergent (development of dialects). Eng- 33
 34 lish is dominant, but there have been previous bandwagons such as French in diplomacy, 34
 35 or Latin as *lingua franca*. 35

36 Some Americans argue for “English only” laws based on a network externality; 36
 37 across the border, Canadians intervene to discourage *de facto* standardization on Eng- 37
 38 lish [[Church and King \(1993\)](#)]. As we discuss in Section 3.3.5 below, the net externality 38
 39 involved in choosing between two network goods (such as languages) is ambiguous. Of 39
 40 course, many people learn more than one language, but native English speakers are less 40
 41 apt to do so. [Shy \(1996\)](#) stresses that who learns a second language can be indetermi- 41
 42 nate and/or inefficient, as [Farrell and Saloner \(1992\)](#) noted for converters or adapters 42
 43 generally. 43

1 *Law* Klausner (1995) and Kahan and Klausner (1996, 1997) argue that contracts and 1
 2 corporate form are subject to network effects (especially under common law), as it is 2
 3 valuable to use legal forms that have already been clarified through litigation by oth- 3
 4 ers, although Ribstein and Kobayashi (2001) question this empirically. Radin (2002) 4
 5 discusses standardization versus customization in the law generally. 5
 6

7 *Securities markets and exchanges* Securities markets and exchanges benefit from liq- 7
 8 uidity or thickness: see Economides and Siow (1988), Domowitz and Steil (1999), 8
 9 Ahdieh (2003). When there is more trade in a particular security its price is less volatile 9
 10 and more informative, and investors can buy and sell promptly without moving the mar- 10
 11 ket. This helps explain why only a few of the imaginable financial securities are traded, 11
 12 and why each tends to be traded on one exchange unless institutions allow smooth 12
 13 cross-exchange trading. 13

14 Not only do buyers wish for more sellers and vice versa, but this positive cross- 14
 15 effect outweighs the negative own-effect (sellers wish there were fewer other sellers); 15
 16 the difference is the value of liquidity, an efficiency gain from a large (thick) market. 16
 17 This fuels a network effect. 17

18 If products are differentiated, a larger network offers more efficient matches. This 18
 19 is the network effect behind eBay, and could be important in competition among B2B 19
 20 (business-to-business) exchanges [FTC 2000; Bonaccorsi and Rossi (2002)]. This also 20
 21 captures part of the value of liquidity, in that a larger market is more likely to have 21
 22 “coincidence of wants”. 22
 23

24 3.2.2. *Econometric approaches* 24 25

26 Quantitative work on network effects has focused on two questions. First, it aims to 26
 27 estimate and quantify network effects. Second, some less formal work aims to test im- 27
 28 plications of the theory, notably the possibility of persistent inefficient outcomes. 28

29 The theory of network effects claims that widespread adoption causes high value. 29
 30 How can one test this? Clearly one cannot simply include demand for a good as an 30
 31 econometric predictor of demand for that good. At the level of individual adoptions, 31
 32 it may be hard to disentangle network effects from correlations in unobserved taste or 32
 33 quality variables [Manski (1993)]. Moreover, dynamic implications of network effects 33
 34 may be hard to distinguish econometrically from learning or herding. 34

35 Meanwhile, the theory predicts path dependence, which implies both large “errors” 35
 36 and a small number of observations (a network industry may display a lot of autocorrela- 36
 37 tion). Likewise it predicts that modest variations in parameters will have unpredictable 37
 38 effects, and focuses largely on claims about efficiency, all of which makes testing a 38
 39 challenge. Nevertheless, some work aims to quantify these effects. 39

40 A popular hedonic approach compares demand for two products that differ in the 40
 41 network effects expected; the approach aims to isolate this effect from that of other 41
 42 quality variables. A natural proxy for expected network effects is previous sales: lagged 42
 43 sales or the installed base, relying on some inertia in network size. Thus Brynjolfsson 43

1 and Kemerer (1996) estimated that the value of an installed base of spreadsheet users 1
 2 represented up to 30% of the price of the market leader in the late 1980s; similarly 2
 3 Gandal (1994, 1995b) found a premium for Lotus-compatibility in PC spreadsheets. 3
 4 Hartman and Teece (1990) find network effects in minicomputers. This approach risks 4
 5 misinterpreting unobserved quality as network effects; but Goolsbee and Klenow (2002) 5
 6 find evidence of strictly local network effects in the adoption of PCs, using geographic 6
 7 variation to control for unobserved quality. 7

8 Another econometric approach rests on the fact that large adopters may better 8
 9 internalize network effects, and may care less than smaller adopters about compatibility 9
 10 with others. Saloner and Shepard (1995) found that banks with more branches tended 10
 11 to install cash machines (ATMs) sooner. Gowrisankaran and Stavins (2004) also use 11
 12 geographic variation to estimate network effects for automated transactions by banks. 12
 13 Gowrisankaran and Akerberg (in press) aim to separate consumer-level from bank- 13
 14 level network effects.¹⁰⁴ 14

15 It is easier to identify cross-effects between complementary groups, estimating how 15
 16 more adoption by one affects demand by the other (but recall that complementarities 16
 17 need not imply network effects). Rosse (1967) documented that newspaper advertisers 17
 18 pay more to advertise in papers with more readers, although news readers may not value 18
 19 having more advertisements; by contrast, readers do value having more advertisements 19
 20 in the Yellow Pages [Rysman (2004)]. Dranove and Gandal (2003) and Karaca-Mandic 20
 21 (2004) also focus on the cross-effects. 21

22 Testing the central efficiency implications of the theory is hard, because (a) it is hard 22
 23 (and not standard economic methodology) to directly assess the efficiency of outcomes, 23
 24 and (b) the theory's prediction that outcomes depend sensitively on early events and are 24
 25 insensitive to later events, costs and tastes, is also hard to test. Liebowitz and Margolis 25
 26 (2001) argue that software products succeed when measured quality is higher, and that 26
 27 prices do not systematically rise after the market tips; they infer that network effects 27
 28 seem unimportant.¹⁰⁵ Bresnahan and Greenstein (1999) argues that effective competi- 28
 29 tion for the market occurs only at rather rare "epochs" or windows of opportunity, so 29
 30 that high quality may be necessary but is not sufficient for success. 30

31 Fascinating though they are, these case studies and empirics do not satisfyingly 31
 32 resolve the theoretical questions raised below, in particular, those concerning the ef- 32
 33 ficiency of equilibria. 33

34 3.3. Under-adoption and network externalities 34

35 In this sub-section we follow the early literature on network effects in focusing on the 35
 36 single-network case and on the total effect or (often) adoption externality. 36
 37 37
 38 38
 39 39
 40 40

41 ¹⁰⁴ See also Guibourg (2001) and Kauffman and Wang (1999). 41

42 ¹⁰⁵ Liebowitz and Margolis (1994) suggest that network effects may be essentially exhausted at relevant 42
 43 scales, so that the u function flattens out, as Asvanund et al. (2004) found in file sharing. However, Shapiro 43
 (1999) argues that network effects are less likely than classic scale economies to be exhausted. 43

3.3.1. Formalities

Each of K players, or adopters, chooses an action: to adopt a product or not, or to adopt one product (network) or another. We often interpret these players not as individuals but as “groups” of adopters, where group i is of size n_i and $\sum n_i = N$. Often (but see Section 3.3.2), we treat each group as making an all-or-nothing choice, to adopt or not, or to adopt one product or its rival.

Player i has payoff $u_a^i(x)$ from action a if a total of x adopters choose action a ; for simplicity, assume there is only one alternative, a' .¹⁰⁶ Recalling our definition in Section 3.1, we say that there are network effects in a if, for each i , both the payoff $u_a^i(x)$ and the adoption incentive $u_a^i(x) - u_{a'}^i(N - x)$ are increasing in x .¹⁰⁷ At this point we are considering adoption incentives, so these payoffs include prices.

For simplicity, the literature often takes $K = 2$, though the problems might not be very interesting with literally only two adopters. Consider two groups choosing whether or not to adopt a single product. If a non-adopter’s payoff is unaffected by how many others adopt, then we can normalize it as zero, and (dropping the subscript) write $u^i(x)$ for i ’s payoff from adoption, as in Figure 31.1.

		Group 2 adopts	Group 2 does not adopt
Group 1 adopts		$u^1(N), u^2(N)$	$u^1(n_1), 0$
Group 1 does not adopt		$0, u^2(n_2)$	$0, 0$

Figure 31.1. Adoption payoffs from single network good.

Network effects arise for this single product if $u^i(N) > u^i(n_i)$ for $i = 1, 2, \dots, K$ ¹⁰⁸; in Section 3.3.3, we show that this implies both parts of our definition. However, often the leading alternative to one network product is another, as in Figure 31.2.

Network effects arise if $u_a^i(N) > u_a^i(n_i)$ for $i = 1, 2$ and $a = A, B$; again, this implies both parts of our definition.

Network effects are strong if they outweigh each adopter’s preferences for A versus B , so that each prefers to do whatever others do. Then “all adopt A ” and “all adopt B ” are both Nash equilibria of the simultaneous-move non-cooperative game whose payoff matrix is Figure 31.2. Strong network effects thus create multiple equilibria if

¹⁰⁶ It is not immediately clear how best to extend the definition to more than two alternatives: for which alternative(s) a' must the “adoption incentive” described in the text increase with adoption of a , and which alternatives does that adoption displace? The literature has not focused on these questions and we do not address them here.

¹⁰⁷ In reality network benefits are not homogeneous [Beige (2001) discusses local network effects, or communities of interest]. Also note that if $u_a^i(x)$ is linear in x and independent of i , then the total value of the network is quadratic in x : “Metcalfe’s law”. Swann (2002) and Rohlfs (2001) argue that this is very special and even extreme.

¹⁰⁸ We often assume for clarity that u is strictly increasing when there are network effects.

		Group 2 adopts A	Group 2 adopts B	
1				1
2	Group 1 adopts A	$u_A^1(N), u_A^2(N)$	$u_A^1(n_1), u_B^2(n_2)$	2
3	Group 1 adopts B	$u_B^1(n_1), u_A^2(n_2)$	$u_B^1(N), u_B^2(N)$	3
4				4

Figure 31.2. Adoption payoffs with rival network goods.

adoption is simultaneous (not literally, but in the game-theoretic sense that players cannot react to others' actual choices but must base their actions on expectations). For a single network product (Figure 31.1), network effects are strong if, for all i , $u^i(N) > 0$ (each would adopt if others do, or more precisely if he expects others to adopt) and $u^i(n_i) < 0$ (each will not if others do not). Thus "no adoption" can be an equilibrium even for valuable network goods: the chicken-and-egg problem [Leibenstein (1950)], especially in the "fragmented" case where groups are small in the sense that each $u^i(n_i)$ is small relative to $u^i(N)$.

3.3.2. What are the groups?

Calling each kind of adopter a group, even though it does not act as a single player, can help focus on the complementarity of adoption by different kinds of adopter. For instance, in camera formats, we might make photographers one group and film processors the other. Then each group's benefit from adoption increases when the other group adopts more strongly. Often this reformulation greatly reduces the number of groups: here, from millions of individuals to two groups.

This departs from our formal definition in two ways. First, each group does not coordinate internally and does not make an all-or-nothing adoption choice; rather, some but not all members of each group adopt. Second, there may be no intra-group network effects; there may even be intra-group congestion. Thus, given the number of photographers, a developer prefers fewer other developers for competitive reasons, just as with merchants accepting credit cards.

A different reformulation of the groups views only photographers as adopters, and diagnoses an "indirect network effect" among them, mediated through the equilibrium response of film processors. Doing so returns us to the strict framework above, but pushes the processors into the background.

Another way in which identifying groups is a non-trivial modeling choice is that adoption choices often are made at several different vertical levels (see Section 3.8.3ii). For instance, in the PC industry, memory technology is chosen by memory manufacturers, by producers of complements such as chipsets, by computer manufacturers (OEMs), and/or by end users or their employers. Even in a simple model, "adopters" may be vendors, or may be end users choosing between standards if vendors have chosen incompatible technologies.

3.3.3. Total and marginal effects

Our definition of network effects requires that (a) one agent’s adoption of a good benefits other adopters, and that (b) his adoption increases others’ incentive to adopt. We call these respectively the total effect and the marginal effect. We noted above that the marginal effect might apply to merchants’ decisions to accept credit cards even if the total effect does not, if a merchant’s adoption hurts his rivals who do not adopt more than it hurts those who do. On the other hand, the total effect can apply where the marginal effect does not: if one firm in a standard Cournot oligopoly chooses a lower output, it benefits other firms who have chosen a low output, but those other firms then typically have an incentive to increase their output.¹⁰⁹

Although the two conditions are logically separate, definitions in the literature often mention only the total effect. The (seldom explicit) reason is that if the total effect holds for both alternatives A and B then the marginal effect follows. Group 2’s incentive to adopt A rather than B is $u_A^2(N) - u_B^2(n_2)$ if group 1 has adopted A; it is $u_A^2(n_2) - u_B^2(N)$ if group 1 has adopted B. The marginal effect therefore holds if $u_A^2(N) - u_B^2(n_2) > u_A^2(n_2) - u_B^2(N)$, or $u_A^2(N) + u_B^2(N) > u_A^2(n_2) + u_B^2(n_2)$; but this follows from adding the two total-effect conditions $u_y^i(N) > u_y^i(n_i)$ for $i = 2$ and $y = A, B$.

The early literature focused on a single network with a scale-independent outside good. Thus (as in Figure 31.1) each group’s payoff from B is independent of others’ choices, so there are network effects in A if and only if the total effect holds for A. Accordingly, although the early literature generally stressed the total effect, the marginal effect follows. By contrast, recent work stresses competing networks, with much more stress on the marginal effect, which is essentially Segal’s (1999) “increasing externalities” or Topkis’ (1978, 1998) “supermodularity” [see also Milgrom and Roberts (1990)].

3.3.4. Under-adoption of a single network

Two forms of under-adoption threaten a network good. First, the marginal effect causes a chicken-and-egg coordination problem. Second, if the network effect is an externality (see below), there is too little incentive to adopt at the margin, because the total effect means that adoption benefits other adopters. We discuss this marginal externality here and the chicken-and-egg problem in Section 3.4.2 below.

In Figure 31.1, if $u^1(N) > 0 > u^2(N)$ then player 1 would like the “all adopt” outcome but, even if he adopts, player 2 will not. If $u^1(n_1) < 0$ then the unique equilibrium is no adoption; if instead $u^1(n_1) > 0$ then equilibrium is adoption by group 1 alone. In either case, if $u^1(N) + u^2(N) > \max[u^1(n_1), 0]$ then adoption by all would increase

¹⁰⁹ Other firms would have an incentive to reduce their outputs if firms’ outputs are “strategic complements” [Bulow, Geanakoplos and Klemperer (1985a, 1985b)], and the marginal effect then does apply.

1 total surplus. Since each player likes the other to adopt, each one's adoption incentive
2 is too weak from the viewpoint of adopters jointly.

3 The efficient outcome can still be an equilibrium if this bias is not too strong, and
4 this generic observation takes an interesting form here. Say that preferences are *sim-*
5 *ilar* if the players agree on the best outcome, so $u^i(N)$ has the same sign for all i .
6 Then the efficient outcome, which is either "all adopt" or "no adoption", is an equilib-
7 rium of the simultaneous-adoption game suggested by Figure 31.1, as Liebowitz and
8 Margolis (1994) noted. Moreover, while this equilibrium need not be unique, it is each
9 player's best feasible outcome, and many institutions (including side payments, sequen-
10 tial moves and commitment, and communication) preserve and reinforce it.

11 But normally the bias will cause wrong choices. In a static framework, it makes the
12 network too *small*.¹¹⁰ If adoption is dynamic, for instance if costs fall over time, the
13 same logic makes adoption too *slow*.¹¹¹ It is efficient to subsidize a marginal adopter
14 for whom the cost of service exceeds his private willingness to pay, but exceeds it by
15 less than the increase in other adopters' value. Such subsidies can be hard to target, as
16 we discuss next, but there is a deeper problem too, even with perfectly discriminatory
17 prices. With complete information and adopter-specific pricing, Segal (1999) finds that
18 without externalities on non-traders, efficiency results if the sponsor simultaneously
19 and publicly makes an offer to each adopter, but because there are positive externalities
20 on efficient traders, there is too little adoption when offers are "private," or essentially
21 bilateral. Efficiency requires multilateral bargaining, in which trade between the sponsor
22 and one trader depends on trade with others.

24 3.3.5. Are network effects externalities?

26 Network effects often involve externalities, in the sense that prices do not fully incor-
27 porate the benefits of one person's adoption for others. Indeed, early literature often
28 simply called network effects "network externalities". But network effects are not al-
29 ways externalities, as Liebowitz and Margolis (1994) stressed.

30 Liebowitz and Margolis argue that many indirect network effects are pecuniary. If
31 adoption by buyers just lowers price, it might be that Figure 31.1 describes payoffs
32 to buyers, but sellers bear an equal negative effect. Then, while *buyers jointly* could
33 be made better off by a well-targeted small subsidy from inframarginal to marginal
34 buyers, no such subsidy can make *everyone* (sellers included) better off. However, the
35 microfoundations of such pecuniary network effects seem unclear. Decreasing costs in
36

38 ¹¹⁰ Beige (2001) shows that equilibrium locally maximizes a "harmony" function that counts only half of the
39 network effects in the sum of payoffs.

40 ¹¹¹ Dynamic adoption paths with falling prices or other "drivers" of increasing adoption have been studied by
41 (e.g.) Rohlfs (1974), Farrell and Shapiro (1992, 1993), Economides and Himmelberg (1995), Choi and Thum
42 (1998), and Vettas (2000). Prices may fall over time because of Coasian dynamics: see Section 3.6. Adoption
43 paths can also be driven by the strengthening of network effects: human languages with more trade and travel;
computer programming languages with more modularity and re-use; VCRs with more movie rental.

1 a competitive industry often reflect a real economy of scale (perhaps upstream), so there 1
 2 is an efficiency (not just pecuniary) benefit of coordination. With no real economy of 2
 3 agglomeration, it is unclear how a sheer price shift can both favor buyers and also induce 3
 4 additional entry by sellers, as we noted in Section 3.1. Church, Gandal and Krause 4
 5 (2002) stress that there can be a real efficiency gain when a larger “hardware” network 5
 6 attracts more varied “software”, not just lower prices. 6

7 More compellingly, any economic effect is an externality only if not internalized. 7
 8 A network effect might be internalized through side payments among adopters, although 8
 9 this will be hard if there are many players or private information. Alternatively (see 9
 10 Sections 3.6 and 3.7) a seller who can capture the benefits of a larger network might 10
 11 internalize network effects and voluntarily subsidize marginal adopters, as in Segal’s 11
 12 (1999) model of public offers. But unless a seller can accurately target those adopters, 12
 13 subsidy is costly, and while it may sometimes work well enough, it seems clear that it 13
 14 often will not. Indeed, first-best pricing would require the price to each adopter to be 14
 15 equal to incremental cost less his external contribution to others, and such pricing jeop- 15
 16 ardizes profits and budget balance. Suppose for instance that a good will be supplied if 16
 17 and only if all K groups agree. For first-best adoption incentives, the price facing group 17
 18 i should be equal to the cost C of supplying the good to all, less the additional surplus 18
 19 accruing to groups other than i as a result of group i ’s agreeing: $p_i = C - \sum_{j \neq i} u^j(N)$. 19
 20 Hence $\sum p_i - C = (K - 1)[C - \sum u^i(N)]$, so costs are covered if and only if adop- 20
 21 tion is inefficient! (First-best incentives require that each adopter be a residual claimant, 21
 22 leaving the vendor a negative equity interest at the margin.) For these reasons, adoption 22
 23 prices will often not fully internalize network effects, and a profitably supplied single 23
 24 network good will be under-adopted. 24

25 Third, any externalities are smaller and ambiguous when networks compete. To illus- 25
 26 trate, suppose that $K = 3$, and that groups 1 and 2 have adopted A and B , respectively; 26
 27 now group 3 is choosing. A -adopters (group 1) gain if group 3 adopts A , but B -adopters 27
 28 gain if it adopts B . When each choice means rejecting the other, the net effect on others 28
 29 is ambiguous.¹¹² 29

31 3.4. The coordination problem 31

32 33 When networks compete, we just noted that any conventional externality becomes 33
 34 weaker and ambiguous. The same logic, however, *strengthens* the marginal effect – 34
 35 35

36 112 To quantify, treat K as large, and approximate the set of adopters with a continuum. A small shift of dx 36
 37 users from a network of size x_A to one of size x_B has a net effect on other adopters of $e = [x_B u'_B(x_B) -$ 37
 38 $x_A u'_A(x_A)] dx$: this has ambiguous sign and is smaller in magnitude than at least one of the $x_i u'_i(x_i) dx$. 38
 39 The incentive to “splinter” from what most others are doing is too strong at the margin (defection imposes 39
 40 a negative net externality, or conformity confers a positive externality) if $e < 0$ whenever $x_B < x_A$. When 40
 41 the goods are homogeneous except for network size, that condition is that $xu'(x)$ is increasing: see Farrell 41
 42 and Saloner (1992). In the convenient (if unrealistic) Metcalfe’s Law case $u(n) = vn$, there is thus too much 42
 43 incentive to defect from a network to which most players will adhere. Then there is not just a benefit but a 43
 44 positive externality from conformity. 43

1 the fact that adoption encourages others to adopt the same network. A user's adoption
 2 of A instead of B not only directly makes A more attractive to others but also makes the
 3 alternative, B , less so.¹¹³ For instance, part of the positive feedback in the adoption of
 4 CDs was the declining availability of LP records as CDs became more popular.

5 Through the marginal effect, strong network effects create multiple adoption equilibria
 6 and hence coordination problems. Optimal coordination is hard, as everyday experience
 7 and laboratory experiments [Ochs (1995), Gneezy and Rottenstreich (2004)] confirm.
 8 Coordination problems include actual breakdowns of coordination (Section 3.4.1)
 9 and coordination on the wrong focal point (Section 3.4.2). Coordination is especially
 10 difficult – and the institutions to aid it work less well – when (as in the Battle of the
 11 Sexes) the incentive for coordination coexists with conflict over what to coordinate on.

13 3.4.1. Coordination breakdowns: mistakes, splintering, and wait-and-see

15 Coordination “breaks down” when adopters choose incompatible options but would all
 16 prefer to coordinate. This can happen in at least two ways, which we call confusion and
 17 splintering. Economic theorists' equilibrium perspective pushes them toward (probably
 18 over-) optimistic views on the risks of such failures, but case studies and policy discus-
 19 sion often implicate coordination failures.

21 *Confusion* Coordination can break down by mistake or confusion if adopters do not
 22 know what others are doing.¹¹⁴ Common knowledge of plans averts such confusion,
 23 and the simplest models assume it away by focusing on pure-strategy equilibrium, in
 24 which by definition players know one another's strategies and do not make mistakes.¹¹⁵
 25 Other models use mixed-strategy equilibrium,¹¹⁶ which may be too pessimistic about
 26 coordination: each player's attempt to coordinate with others is maximally difficult in
 27 mixed-strategy equilibrium.¹¹⁷

29 *Splintering* Second, coordination can break down even in pure-strategy equilibrium
 30 with strategic certainty. This happens if product differentiation discourages unilateral

33 ¹¹³ With a continuum of adopters, the gain in A 's relative attractiveness from a small increase in its adoption
 34 at B 's expense is proportional not just to $u'_A(x_A)$, as it would be if A were the only network good, but to
 35 $u'_A(x_A) + u'_B(x_B)$. Note that this strengthening of the marginal effect depends on the total effect in both A
 36 and B .

37 ¹¹⁴ In *The Gift of the Magi*, a famous short story by O. Henry, Jim sold his watch to buy his wife Della a
 38 comb; Della sold her hair to buy Jim a watch-chain. Their plans were secret because each was meant as a
 39 Christmas surprise for the other.

40 ¹¹⁵ Rationalizability, on the other hand, unhelpfully permits any outcome in a simultaneous-adoption game
 41 with strong network effects.

42 ¹¹⁶ See for instance Dixit and Shapiro (1986), Farrell (1987), Farrell and Saloner (1988), Bolton and Farrell
 43 (1990), Crawford (1995).

44 ¹¹⁷ But mixed-strategy equilibrium can be defended as a shorthand for a symmetric Bayesian–Nash equilib-
 45 rium with incomplete information.

1 moves (e.g. to slightly larger networks) but is weak enough that a coordinated move of 1
 2 everyone on networks *B*, *C* and *D* to network *A* would benefit all. 2

3 When there are just two networks *A* and *B* splintering is impossible if the users 3
 4 of each network can optimally coordinate as a group, but can arise if, for example, 4
 5 a coordinated move of everyone on network *B* to network *A* would benefit all of them, 5
 6 but the users of *B* cannot coordinate. 6

7 The incompatible outcome is thus (in game-theory language) an equilibrium but not 7
 8 coalition-proof: if multiple decision makers could coordinate a move they would all 8
 9 do better. We call this *splintering*: a dysfunctional equilibrium with multiple small and 9
 10 consequently unsuccessful networks instead of one large and successful one. Common 10
 11 knowledge of plans does *not* avert these problems; their solution requires a leadership- 11
 12 like ability to focus on “let’s all do *X* instead”. 12

13 Evidence that splintering is important includes the demand for consensus compatibil- 13
 14 ity standards, which provide just such leadership.¹¹⁸ Such standards (see Section 3.4.3) 14
 15 go beyond mere communication of plans, since common knowledge need not cure 15
 16 the problem. For instance, following [Thompson \(1954\)](#), [Hemenway \(1975\)](#) and [Gabel](#) 16
 17 [\(1991\)](#) argue that early twentieth-century standardization of auto parts mainly reduced 17
 18 spurious variety. Even before the standardization meetings any manufacturer could have 18
 19 chosen to match another’s (non-proprietary, non-secret) specifications; apparently such 19
 20 a unilateral move would not pay, but a coordinated voluntary move did.¹¹⁹ But consen- 20
 21 sensus standards generally are non-binding and do not involve side payments, so they 21
 22 would not affect a failure to standardize that was a coalition-proof equilibrium reflection 22
 23 of (say) differences in tastes. 23

24 There is little theoretical work on splintering, although [Kretschmer \(2001\)](#) explores 24
 25 how it can retard innovation when there are multiple alternatives to a single estab- 25
 26 lished standard.¹²⁰ But it features prominently in case studies. [Postrel \(1990\)](#) argued 26
 27 that quadraphonic sound in the 1970s failed because competing firms sponsored in- 27
 28 compatible quad systems and because hardware producers did not adequately manage 28
 29 complements (recorded music). [Rohlf’s \(2001\)](#) describes how competing incompatible 29
 30 fax systems (invented in 1843) stalled for over a century until consensus standardiza- 30
 31 tion in the late 1970s.¹²¹ [Augereau](#), [Greenstein](#) and [Rysman](#) (in press) claim that the 31
 32 adoption of 56kbps modem technology in aggregate was stalled by the coexistence of 32
 33 two equally good incompatible standards until the ITU issued a third that became focal. 33
 34 34

36 ¹¹⁸ An optimistic view would be that consensus standards promptly solve the problem wherever it arises, 36
 37 so splintering never persists. But finding consensus standards seems slow and painful, which casts doubt on 37
 38 such optimism. If the pain and slowness arises from difficulty in finding Pareto-improving coordinated shifts, 38
 39 however, then the theory sketched in the text is incomplete. 39

40 ¹¹⁹ The point is not that there are increasing returns in compatibility benefits, but that a critical mass may be 40
 41 necessary to overcome differences in tastes, beliefs, etc. 41

42 ¹²⁰ [Goerke and Holler \(1995\)](#) and [Woeckener \(1999\)](#) also stress inefficiencies of splintering. 42

43 ¹²¹ [Economides and Himmelberg \(1995\)](#) estimated a demand system for the adoption of fax under a single 43
 standard. 43

1 Saloner (1990) discusses splintering among Unix implementations (widely blamed for
2 slow adoption of Unix until Linux became relatively focal). Besen and Johnson (1986)
3 argued that AM stereo was adopted slowly because there were competing, broadly
4 comparable, standards and no player could start a strong bandwagon: adopters (radio
5 stations) avoided explicit coordination because of antitrust fears, and the FCC did not
6 take a lead. Microsoft was accused of “polluting” or intentionally splintering the Java
7 standard when it perceived the latter as a threat to its own non-Java standard. Rysman
8 (2004) notes that competition in yellow pages may involve splintering, thus reducing
9 network benefits (although he finds that this does not outweigh losses from monopoly).
10 He does not assess whether advertisers and users might instead all coordinate on the
11 directory that offers them jointly the best deal – a sunnier non-splintering view of in-
12 compatible competition that theory has tended to find focal.

13 Do similar splintering concerns arise with traditional economies of scale? In terms
14 of cooperative game theory (how much surplus is generated by various groups of par-
15 ticipants) network effects and economies of scale are isomorphic, so concerns about
16 splintering parallel classic concerns about inefficiently small-scale production in mo-
17 nopolistic competition. Modern models of the latter, since Spence (1976) and Dixit and
18 Stiglitz (1977), mostly attribute splintering among monopolistically competitive firms
19 to horizontal product differentiation, and because variety is valuable, these models find
20 that although each firm is too small to minimize average cost, it need not be too small for
21 overall efficiency. But the classical suspicion that equilibrium involves too much frag-
22 mentation re-surfaces in that a popular claimed efficiency motive for horizontal mergers
23 is achieving more efficient scale.¹²²

24
25 *Fear of breakdowns* Even mere fear of coordination breakdowns may delay adoption
26 as people wait to see what others will do.¹²³ This can inefficiently slow adoption through
27 strategic uncertainty rather than because of the externality from adoption.

28 29 3.4.2. Coordinating on the wrong equilibrium

30
31 Because coordination is hard, clumsy cues such as tradition and authority are often used.
32 Schelling (1960) suggested that two people wishing to meet in New York might well
33 go, by tradition, to Grand Central Station at noon. Many species of animals meet at
34 fixed times or places for mating. Human meetings, and work hours, are often arranged
35 in advance, and thus do not respond sensitively to later-revealed information about what
36 is convenient for participants. The persistence of such clumsy solutions testifies to the
37 difficulty of flexible optimal coordination. It would therefore be surprising if multiple
38 adopters of networks always coordinated on the choice that gives them the most surplus.

39
40
41 ¹²² For a skeptical view see Farrell and Shapiro (2001). A merger removes all competition between firms,
42 whereas a common standard replaces incompatible competition with compatible competition; see Section 3.9.

43 ¹²³ Kornish (2006) describes a “decision-theoretic” model of adoption timing under strategic uncertainty, but
takes as given the behavior of all agents but one.

1 Other parts of economics have studied the possibility of (perhaps persistent) coordi- 1
 2 nation on the wrong equilibrium. Rosenstein-Rodan (1943) and Murphy, Shleifer 2
 3 and Vishny (1989) suggested that industrialization requires a “Big Push” that coordi- 3
 4 nates many sectors of the economy and that may not happen under *laissez-faire*. That 4
 5 is, industrialization is a “good” equilibrium, but the economy may stay at the “bad” 5
 6 pre-industrial equilibrium without major intervention. Modern economic geography 6
 7 sees patterns of development as partly fortuitous [Saxenian (1994), Krugman (1991a), 7
 8 Davis and Weinstein (2002)]. Macroeconomists have studied how otherwise irrelevant 8
 9 “sunspot” signals can guide economies to good or bad equilibria¹²⁴; game theory has 9
 10 studied how cheap talk can do so. 10

11 Starting from a bad equilibrium, there would (by definition) be joint rewards for get- 11
 12 ting to a better equilibrium, but no rewards to individually deviating. As Liebowitz and 12
 13 Margolis (1994, 1995) stressed, this can suggest a role for an entrepreneur: in Sec- 13
 14 tions 3.6–3.8 below, we note some entrepreneurial tactics. 14
 15

16 i. *Single network* With a single network (Figure 31.1), voluntary adoption is weakly 16
 17 Pareto-improving, so an equilibrium with more adoption Pareto-dominates one with 17
 18 less. Dybvig and Spatt (1983) show that there is a *maximal equilibrium*, in which all 18
 19 players who adopt in any equilibrium adopt. This maximal equilibrium is Pareto pre- 19
 20 ferred to all other equilibria, which thus have too little adoption.¹²⁵ 20

21 As in any game with multiple equilibria, *expectations are key*. If players expect oth- 21
 22 ers to adopt, they too will adopt. Shifting from a simultaneous-move perspective to a 22
 23 more dynamic one (informally at this point), implications include positive feedback and 23
 24 critical mass: once enough adoption happens or is confidently foreseen, further self- 24
 25 reinforcing adoption follows. Similarly lack of adoption is self-reinforcing: a network 25
 26 product can enter a “death spiral” (a dynamic form of the chicken-and-egg problem) if 26
 27 low adoption persuades others not to adopt.¹²⁶ 27

28 While they both involve under-adoption, this chicken-and-egg problem is quite dif- 28
 29 ferent from the marginal externality in Sections 3.3.4 and 3.3.5 above. The marginal 29
 30 problem arises only when preferences are not similar,¹²⁷ could typically be helped by 30
 31 small subsidies to marginal adopters, and cannot be solved by voluntary joint action 31
 32 without side payments; whereas the chicken-and-egg problem arises even with identi- 32
 33 cal adopters, might be solvable by coordinating better without side payments, and often 33
 34 cannot be helped by small subsidies. 34
 35

37 ¹²⁴ See e.g. Cooper (1999), Cooper and John (1988), Diamond (1982), and Bryant (1994). 37

38 ¹²⁵ This is characteristic of games with supermodularity [Topkis (1978, 1998) or Milgrom and Roberts 38
 39 (1990)] or “strategic complements” [Bulow, Geanakoplos and Klemperer (1985a, 1985b)]. 39

40 ¹²⁶ Schelling (1978) describes such dynamics in a wide range of applications. Of course, the dynamics can 40
 41 also work in the other direction, with critical mass and take-off. Jeitschko and Taylor (2001) study the stability 41
 42 of “faith-based coordination”. 42

43 ¹²⁷ This assumes, as does most of the literature, that each adopter’s choice is zero-one. When each adopter 43
 44 makes a continuous quantity choice a marginal problem arises even if preferences are identical. 44

ii. *Competing networks* Similar coordination problems can cause the adoption of the wrong network good. In Figure 31.2, if players expect others to adopt *A*, they will do so, but expectations in favor of *B* are equally self-fulfilling. And if expectations clash, so too will choices. What, then, drives expectations? In general one must look to cues outside Figures 31.1 and 31.2, as we discuss in the rest of this subsection.

Clumsy coordination can also blunt competitive pressures among networks, since business does not reliably go to the best offer, as we discuss in Section 3.7.

3.4.3. Cheap talk and consensus standards

A natural response to a coordination problem is to talk. Credible talk can make plans common knowledge and thus avert confusion-based coordination failures, and may help adopters coordinate changes in plans and thus escape splintered equilibria or coordination on the wrong focal point. In fact, many voluntary “consensus standards” are reached through talk, sometimes mediated through standards organizations; David and Shurmer (1996) report that consensus standardization has grown dramatically.¹²⁸ Large official organizations often have formal procedures; smaller consortia may be more flexible.¹²⁹ The economics literature on consensus standards is less developed than that on de facto or bandwagon standards, perhaps because reaching consensus seems political rather than a narrowly economic process.

Game theory finds that cheap talk works less well the more conflict there is. At the vendor level, conflict can arise because not everyone wants to coordinate: see Section 3.8 below. Discussion of consensus standards has focused more on conflict that arises if all players want to coordinate but disagree over what to coordinate on, as in the Battle of the Sexes. For example, when a promising new technology arrives, conflict is likely between the “installed base” of those who are more locked in to an old technology and those who are less so. Gabel (1991) argues that conflict is likely between those who are and are not vertically integrated. Conflict may also arise because active participants in standards organizations tend to have vested interests (which indeed may motivate them to bear the costs of participating).¹³⁰ Vested interest may be especially strong when potential standards incorporate intellectual property.

¹²⁸ Some practitioners reserve the term “standard” for formal consensus coordination. Standards organizations include the International Telecommunications Union (ITU), and a wide variety of national standards bodies such as ANSI in the U.S.; ANSI is an umbrella organization for specialized industry standards development. There are also many informal standards fora.

¹²⁹ On the institutions, see e.g. Hemenway (1975), Kahin and Abbate (1995). On the economics of consensus standards development see also Besen and Saloner (1994), Cargill (1989) and Berg and Schumny (1990) describe the standards process in information technology.

Weiss and Sirbu (1990) econometrically study technology choices in voluntary consensus standards committees. Lehr (1995) describes consensus standardization in the Internet. See also OECD (1991), Grindley (1995), and Simcoe (2003).

¹³⁰ Weiss and Sirbu (1990), Farrell and Simcoe (2007) [see also Farrell (1993)].

As a result, attempts to coordinate through talk may induce bargaining delays that dissipate much of the gains from coordination. The economics literature stresses this observation, echoing concerns of many standards participants. Economists have modeled the process as a war of attrition: participants who favor standard *A* hope that those who favor *B* will give up rather than delay further. Farrell and Saloner (1988) introduced such a model with complete information and two participants, and compared “committee” versus “bandwagon” standardization, and against a hybrid mechanism.¹³¹ Farrell and Simcoe (2007) and David and Monroe (1994) observe that when there is private information about the quality of proposed standards, the war of attrition may select for good proposals, although at a high cost [Simcoe (2003) shows how similar results can emerge from rational search by interested parties]. They then assess efficiency consequences of rules in the consensus standards process. For instance, many standards organizations limit the exploitation of intellectual property embodied in standards [Lemley (2002)], and this may reduce delays as well as limit patent-holders’ ex post market power. Simcoe (2003) analyzes data from the Internet Engineering Task Force and finds evidence that more vested interest (measured as more patents, or more commercial participation) causes more delay. Another response is to seek rapid consensus before vested interest ripens.

With two players (as in those models), either can ensure immediate consensus by conceding. With more players, Bulow and Klemperer (1999) show that delays can be very long if conceding brings no reward until others also concede, as is the case if (as in many standards organizations) a standard requires near-unanimous consensus.¹³²

3.4.4. Coordination through sequential choice

Game theory claims that with full information and strong network effects, fully sequential adoption ensures coordination on a Pareto-undominated standard. The argument [Farrell and Saloner (1985)] is fairly convincing with two groups. For simplicity, consider the single-network case. Suppose that $u^i(N) > 0 > u^i(n_i)$ for all i , so that adoption is an efficient equilibrium and non-adoption is an inefficient equilibrium of the simultaneous-adoption game. If group 1 first adopts, then group 2 will also adopt: knowing this, group 1 can (and therefore will) get $u^1(N)$ by adopting. By moving first,

¹³¹ In a hybrid mechanism, compatibility may result either by consensus or by one proponent driving a market bandwagon (but if both try simultaneously, the result is incompatibility). Thus the consensus standards process competes directly against the bandwagon process; Gabel (1991) stresses that network effects can be realized through consensus, bandwagons, or other means. Besen and Farrell (1991) note a different form of competition among processes: less-formal consensus processes may act faster than more formal ones such as the International Telecommunications Union (ITU); Lerner and Tirole (2006) study forum-shopping equilibria in consensus standards.

¹³² By contrast, they show that if a player can cease to bear delay costs by unilaterally conceding (as in oligopolists competing to win a natural monopoly), a multi-player war will quickly collapse to a two-player one. Political scientists analogously have Duverger’s Law, a claim that most elections will have two serious candidates.

1 group 1 can start an irresistible bandwagon: it need not fear that adoption will give it 1
 2 only $u^1(n_1)$; thus only the efficient equilibrium is subgame-perfect when adoption is 2
 3 sequential. 3

4 The argument extends in theory to any finite number of players, and to the choice 4
 5 between two (or more) networks.¹³³ But it is much less compelling with many play- 5
 6 ers: it assumes that each adopter sees all previous choices before making his own, and 6
 7 assumes strong common knowledge of preferences and of rationality to forge a chain 7
 8 of backward induction with (on the order of) K steps, an unreliable form of reasoning 8
 9 (empirically) when K is large. Thus the theoretical result is surely too strong: the first 9
 10 player should not count on it if $u^1(n)$ is very negative for small n ; and if players will not 10
 11 rely on the result, it becomes false. But it does express one possible route out of ineff- 11
 12 cient coordination traps: an influential adopter could try to start a bandwagon. In this 12
 13 respect influence is related to size: when a big player moves, it shifts others' incentives 13
 14 by more than when a small player moves. Indeed, it may even become a dominant strat- 14
 15 egy for others to follow, surely a stronger bandwagon force than backward induction 15
 16 in the subgame among the remaining players. Thus size confers leadership ability, and 16
 17 markets with at least one highly concentrated layer are less apt (other things, notably 17
 18 conflict, equal) to be caught in pure coordination traps. Illustrating this idea, [Holmes](#) 18
 19 [\(1999\)](#) discusses the role of large players in the geographic shift of the U.S. textile in- 19
 20 dustry; [Bresnahan \(2001a\)](#) discusses AOL's role (as a large and potentially pivotal user) 20
 21 in the Netscape–Microsoft battle for browser share. 21

22 This result is optimistic about the ability of adoption bandwagons to avert Pareto- 22
 23 inferior outcomes. As we see next, however, bandwagons may be less good at balancing 23
 24 early and late adopters' preferences. 24
 25

26 3.5. *Inertia in adoption* 26 27

28 Individual switching costs can cause problems, as in Section 2 above, but at least 28
 29 each user makes his own choice. Network effects, by binding together different users' 29
 30 choices, might generate a stronger and more worrying form of inertia, locking soci- 30
 31 ety in to an inefficient product (or behavior) because it is hard to coordinate a switch 31
 32 to something better but incompatible – especially where network effects coexist with 32
 33 individual switching costs. In a range of cases, including QWERTY, English spelling, 33
 34 VHS, and many computer software products, some suggest that a poor standard *ineffi-* 34
 35 *ciently* persists because network effects create excessive inertia. [Liebowitz and Margolis](#) 35
 36 [\(1990, 1995\)](#) are skeptical (notably in QWERTY) and argue [\(2001\)](#) that success in 36
 37 computer software has followed trade reviewers' assessments of product quality; but 37
 38 [Bresnahan and Greenstein \(1999\)](#) argues that this has been true only in wide-open peri- 38
 39 ods and that high quality is necessary but not sufficient for success. It is hard to test ex 39
 40
 41

42 ¹³³ [Farrell and Saloner \(1985\)](#) also show (with two groups) that cheap talk need not help when information 42
 43 on preferences is incomplete; [Lee \(2003\)](#) extends this to K groups. 43

1 post excess inertia in case studies by directly assessing the efficiency of outcomes; we 1
 2 focus instead on the economic logic. Here we ask how much inertia there is in adoption 2
 3 dynamics at given prices. In Sections 3.6 and 3.7, we ask how sponsors' price and other 3
 4 strategies affect it. 4

5 3.5.1. *Ex post inertia* 5

6 6
 7 7
 8 Inertia arises ex post if later adopters remain compatible with the installed base even 8
 9 though an alternative would be better if network effects were neutralized. Just as con- 9
 10 testability theory observes that economies of scale alone do not create an advantage to 10
 11 incumbency, so too network effects alone need not generate inertia: in principle every- 11
 12 one could instantly shift to coordinate on the better alternative. But there are usually 12
 13 some sunk costs or switching costs; and if expectations center on the status quo then 13
 14 inertia results even if there are no tangible intertemporal links. 14

15 Inertia surely is often substantial: Rohlfs (2001) argues from the history of fax that 15
 16 a network product without stand-alone value must be "truly wonderful and low-priced" 16
 17 to succeed; he and others attribute the VCR's success to its offering stand-alone value; 17
 18 Shapiro and Varian (1998) quote Intel CEO Andy Grove's rule of thumb that an incom- 18
 19 compatible improvement must be "ten times better". 19

20 Inertia can be efficient: incompatibility with the installed base is a real social cost if 20
 21 the status quo has network effects. But inertia is ex post "excess" if it would be more 21
 22 efficient for later adopters to switch, *given* earlier adopters' choice. (As that phrasing 22
 23 suggests, we follow the literature in assuming here that the installed base will not switch; 23
 24 if it would, then later adopters would sacrifice no network benefits and would collec- 24
 25 tively have excessive incentives to switch.) For example, it would be ex post excess 25
 26 inertia if society should switch to the DSK typewriter keyboard, counting the full social 26
 27 costs, but network effects and switching costs *inefficiently* prevent this. This requires 27
 28 that pivotal movers inefficiently fail to move, because they expect others not to move 28
 29 (the "horses" problem), or because they bear a larger share of the costs than of the 29
 30 benefits of moving (the "penguins" problem).¹³⁴ 30

31 In a simple two-group case where group 1 is committed and group 2 optimally 31
 32 coordinates internally, neither of these can happen, so inertia cannot be ex post ex- 32
 33 cessive. In Figure 31.2, suppose that group 1 has irreversibly adopted (say) A . To be 33
 34 adopted by group 2, B must be substantially better: $u_B^2(n_2) > u_A^2(N)$, or equivalently 34
 35 $u_B^2(n_2) - u_A^2(n_2) > u_A^2(N) - u_A^2(n_2)$. That is, B 's quality or price advantage (assessed by 35
 36 group 2) must outweigh the additional network benefit of compatibility with group 1 (as- 36
 37 sessed by group 2 when it adopts A). Of course, there is inertia: if group 2 values com- 37
 38 patibility with group 1, B will fail unless it is much better than A . But to maximize total 38
 39 39

40 40
 41 41
 42 42
 43 43
¹³⁴ Farrell and Saloner (1986a) analogize the first problem to horses tied to one another who will not wander far or fast, because none can move independently and staying still is more focal than moving in a particular direction at a particular speed. They [and, e.g., Choi (1997a)] analogize the second problem to penguins, wishing to dive for fish but concerned that the first one in is most vulnerable to predators.

1 surplus ex post, group 2 should adopt B only if $u_B^2(n_2) > u_A^2(N) + [u_A^1(N) - u_A^1(n_1)]$. 1
 2 Group 2 internalizes only part of the social benefit of inter-group compatibility, and is 2
 3 thus too ready to strand group 1. Far from excess inertia, this model displays ex post 3
 4 “excess momentum”.¹³⁵ 4

5 This result instructively contradicts the popular intuition that inertia is obviously ex 5
 6 post excessive. But with more than two groups, ex post excess inertia may well occur, 6
 7 because optimal coordination among ex post adopters may well fail due to coordination 7
 8 problems and/or free-riding. To see this, return to the sequential adoption model of 8
 9 Farrell and Saloner (1985). Adopters 1, 2, . . . , K arrive in sequence and, on arrival, 9
 10 irreversibly choose to adopt A or B . Because of idiosyncratic preferences or relative 10
 11 technological progress over time, adopters have different preferences between A and B . 11
 12 There are network effects: adopter i gets payoff $u_z^i(x_z)$, where x_z is the total number of 12
 13 adopters on his network $z = A, B$. 13

14 Arthur (1989) simplified this framework by assuming that an adopter gets network 14
 15 benefits only from previous adoptions, not future ones; thus adopters need not form 15
 16 expectations about the future. He showed that a technology favored by enough *early* 16
 17 adopters can become permanently locked in. If the relative network sizes ever become 17
 18 lopsided enough to outweigh the strongest idiosyncratic preferences, all subsequent 18
 19 adopters follow suit, because none wants to lead a new bandwagon, even if he knew 19
 20 that all future adopters would join it. There is a free-rider problem in overcoming an 20
 21 installed-base lead. Thus suppose that network effects make $x = 2$ much more valuable 21
 22 than $x = 1$, and that most adopters prefer B , but that by chance the first adopter prefers, 22
 23 and adopts, A . Adopter 2, then, who prefers B , must compare $u_B^2(1)$ against $u_A^2(2)$. He 23
 24 may adopt A only because $x = 1$ is so undesirable, in which case he and all subsequent 24
 25 adopters would pick A ; while if he chose B , then other B -lovers would be happy choos- 25
 26 ing B thereafter.¹³⁶ This is extreme, but getting a new network up to critical mass can 26
 27 generally be costly for the pioneer, harmful to the installed base, but valuable to those 27
 28 who arrive later. 28

29 Arthur’s assumption that adopters do not care about future adoptions seems to fit 29
 30 learning-by-doing with spillovers rather than most network effects, but we can usefully 30
 31 re-formulate it. Adopters more generally get the present value of a flow of network 31
 32 benefits, where the flow is increasing in adoptions to date. Then if adopter 2 adopts B 32
 33 and others follow, his sacrifice of network benefits is only temporary. 33

34 In this broader framework, Arthur’s model assumes that adopters are infinitely impa- 34
 35 tient, thus both ignoring coordination problems and exaggerating the free-rider problem. 35
 36 36

37 ¹³⁵ Farrell and Saloner (1986b) phrased this result in terms of “unique equilibrium” because they did not 37
 38 assume that each group optimally coordinates. Ellison and Fudenberg (2000) use essentially this model with 38
 39 optimal coordination to argue that there may be excessive innovation. If early adopters (group 1 here) would 39
 40 switch ex post to retain compatibility with group 2, group 2 is clearly again too willing to choose B . See also 40
 41 Shy (1996) and Witt (1997). 41

42 ¹³⁶ This is similar to the “informational herding” literature: see e.g. Banerjee (1992), Scharfstein and Stein 42
 43 (1990), Ellison and Fudenberg (1993, 1995), Bikchandani, Hirshleifer and Welch (1992). Berndt, Pindyck 43
 and Azoulay (2003) argue that informational herding creates network effects in anti-ulcer drugs. 43

1 On the other hand, Farrell and Saloner (1986a) considered ex ante identical adopters 1
 2 with a finite discount rate. Adopters adopt immediately on arrival, and good B becomes 2
 3 available at date T . Specializing their model in the opposite direction from Arthur's, 3
 4 if identical adopters are infinitely patient *and* can optimally coordinate from any point 4
 5 on, the problem reduces to the two-group model outlined above in which ex post excess 5
 6 inertia cannot arise. 6

7 But the coordination problem re-emerges as soon as we depart from Arthur's infinite 7
 8 impatience. In particular, if previous history is the leading cue for coordination, then 8
 9 a patient small adopter 2 will compare $u_B^2(1)$ against $u_A^2(K)$,¹³⁷ so that an early lead 9
 10 would be even *more* powerful than Arthur's model suggests; it may be a self-fulfilling 10
 11 prophecy that a minority network will never grow. And if there are many contenders to 11
 12 displace the incumbent, adopters might expect splintering among those who abandon 12
 13 the incumbent [Kretschmer (2001)]. By the same logic, if everyone expects the new 13
 14 network to take over then it often will do so even if it is inefficient. 14

15 With identical adopters, the inductive logic of Farrell and Saloner (1985) suggests 15
 16 that the first adopter to arrive after T is pivotal. If he prefers that everyone forever stick 16
 17 to A , he can adopt A and thus make the next adopter feel all the more strongly the same 17
 18 way; similarly if he prefers that all from now on adopt B .¹³⁸ Because of the free-rider 18
 19 problem, the pivotal adopter may have too little incentive to adopt the new network, B ; 19
 20 on the other hand, adopting B strands the installed base. As in Section 3.3.5 above, 20
 21 the net externality can run in either direction, so ex post excess inertia and excess mo- 21
 22 mentum are both possible, even in unique equilibrium. If we eschew the long chain of 22
 23 backward induction and instead assume that the date- T adopter expects others' future 23
 24 choices to be unaffected by his own (he is small), then there are typically multiple equi- 24
 25 libria and expectations determine the outcome, which can be biased in either direction. 25
 26 This would presumably also be the case if nobody knows which adopter is pivotal. 26

27 Farrell and Saloner (1986a) and Ostrovsky and Schwarz (2005) describe other models 27
 28 in which adopters are currently on A , and choose when, if at all, to switch to B . In these 28
 29 models, efficient coordination is hindered by delays before other adopters can follow 29
 30 an early mover's lead. Each is most easily described for two adopters. In Farrell and 30
 31 Saloner, each adopter has only occasional opportunities to adopt a new technology, so 31
 32 even if each adopts as soon as possible, adopting first entails a temporary loss of network 32
 33 benefits. If that is painful enough, no adopter is willing to lead; the private cost may 33
 34 be either greater or less than the social cost. In Ostrovsky and Schwarz, each adopter 34
 35 chooses a "target" time to adopt, and if there were no noise, immediate adoption by all 35
 36 would be a Pareto-dominant equilibrium. But when actual adoption time is affected by 36
 37 (continuous) noise, Pareto-dominance is not enough. Each adopter i can contemplate 37
 38 slightly delaying its adoption, by dt . If p_i is the probability that it will be the first to 38
 39 39

40
 41 ¹³⁷ This makes what may seem an unduly pessimistic assumption about later adopters' expectations if 40
 42 adopter 2 picks B . But that pessimistic assumption seems more natural if we are instead discussing adopter 3 41
 42 after two A -adoptions. 42

43 ¹³⁸ Thus his preference is evaluated assuming that all subsequent adopters follow his lead. 43

1 adopt, slight delay is privately desirable with probability p_i and then yields a gain of 1
 2 $[u_A^i(2) - u_B^i(1)] dt$; it is privately undesirable with probability $1 - p_i$ and then yields a 2
 3 loss of $[u_B^i(2) - u_A^i(1)] dt$. Hence if $(1 - p_i)[u_B^i(2) - u_A^i(1)] < p_i[u_A^i(2) - u_B^i(1)]$, 3
 4 or $p_i > r_i \equiv \frac{u_B^i(2) - u_A^i(1)}{u_B^i(2) - u_A^i(1) + u_A^i(2) - u_B^i(1)}$, it will prefer to delay slightly. Thus in any 4
 5 equilibrium with adoption by all, $p_i \leq r_i$ for all i . But $\sum p_i = 1$, so if $\sum r_i < 1$ then 5
 6 there is no equilibrium with adoption, even if all would gain ($u_B^i(2) > u_A^i(2)$ for all i) 6
 7 and there is only a little noise. However much each player expects others (collectively) 7
 8 to delay, he wants to delay slightly more. 8
 9
 10

11 *Entry* Our discussion of inertia also informs us about competitive entry of a product 11
 12 that is incompatible with an established network. Inertia implies that even if an en- 12
 13 trant offers a better deal, network effects aside, to new adopters, they may (and perhaps 13
 14 should) stick to the installed base, assuming that the base itself will not move (perhaps 14
 15 because of individual switching costs). Incompatible entry is difficult, and **Fudenberg** 15
 16 **and Tirole (2000)** show that limit pricing can be powerful with network effects. 16

17 If new adopters optimally coordinate, this inertia is presumably because, for them, 17
 18 compatibility with the installed base outweighs the new product's advantages. As noted 18
 19 above, inertia can be ex post efficient given incompatibility,¹³⁹ although even ex post 19
 20 excess momentum (too-strong incentives for such entry) is possible. The point here 20
 21 is not whether incompatible entry is *too* hard ex post, given incompatibility and the 21
 22 installed base, but the fact that even efficient (indeed, even less-than-efficient) inertia 22
 23 can confer ex post market power on the established network. 23

24 Some incompatible innovation/entry succeeds in overcoming inertia. Of course, 24
 25 a product that is "ten times better" may simply outweigh inertia. But inertia can be 25
 26 lowered in other ways, as **Bresnahan and Greenstein's (1999)** discussion of competitive 26
 27 transitions in the computer industry stresses. 27

28 First, compatibility with the installed base eliminates the coordination and free-rider 28
 29 problems, and lowers individual switching costs; even partial compatibility through 29
 30 converters (see Section 3.8) can help. Similarly, multi-homing or double purchase 30
 31 [de Palma, Leruth and Regibeau (1999)] mitigates pivotal adopters' losses of net- 31
 32 work benefits if they switch; **Shapiro (1999)** thus argues that exclusive dealing¹⁴⁰ 32
 33 by incumbents in network markets is especially threatening. Complementors can also 33
 34 multi-home, as when applications software providers "port" their programs from one 34
 35 operating system to another. 35
 36
 37

38 ¹³⁹ Moreover, we saw that ex post excess inertia, blocking ex post efficient incompatible entry, is plausible 38
 39 when there are free-rider or coordination problems among adopters, and perhaps especially if expectations 39
 40 track history; **Krugman (1991b)** discusses the relationship between expectations and history. Since those 40
 41 problems may become more severe as the installed base grows, incompatible entrants may face "narrow 41
 42 windows" of opportunity [**David (1986)**]. 42

43 ¹⁴⁰ Broadly speaking this means agreements that make it hard for an entrant to thrive with small scale or 43
 limited scope. 43

1 Rapid market growth makes the installed base less important relative to new adopters, 1
2 and can thus mitigate pivotal adopters' transient losses of network benefits if they lead a 2
3 switch [Farrell and Saloner (1986a)]; large players may both suffer less from such losses 3
4 and be especially effective leaders of a bandwagon. When expectations otherwise focus 4
5 on the incumbent, mechanisms such as consensus standards to help adopters coordi- 5
6 nate on the best deal can also lower entry barriers. Finally, just as splintering among 6
7 innovators tends to preserve the status quo [Kretschmer (2001)], disarray and incompati- 7
8 bility in the installed base may open up opportunities for a "strong leader" that can 8
9 offer coordination as well as (or instead of) a better product. 9

10 As this last point suggests, successful static compatibility or standardization might 10
11 retard (incompatible) innovation. Although the logic requires care – it is natural that the 11
12 better the status quo, the less likely a good system is to engage in costly change – this 12
13 might be an argument (in the spirit of maintaining biodiversity) against static standard- 13
14 ization, as Cabral and Kretschmer (2007) explore. But while marketwide compatibility 14
15 may retard incompatible replacement of the compatible outcome, mix-and-match com- 15
16 patibility encourages component innovation [Langlois (1992)]. 16
17

18 3.5.2. Early power 18

19 When there will be inertia – even ex post efficient inertia – early movers' choices deter- 19
20 mine later adoptions. Thus early movers might strategically or inadvertently commit to 20
21 a standard that is bad for later adopters but will not be abandoned. We say there is *excess* 21
22 *early power* if early movers adopt and are followed but this is ex ante inefficient: effi- 22
23 ciency might demand instead that they defer to later adopters' preferences, or that they 23
24 wait. That is, early adopters have excess power if their preferences weigh too heavily 24
25 (relative to later adopters') in the collective choice of what is adopted. 25
26

27 Such an ex ante problem is sometimes called excess inertia, but we prefer to distin- 27
28 guish it more sharply from the ex post problem discussed above. They differ not only 28
29 in timing, but in that ex post excess inertia concerns *later* adopters' choices, while ex 29
30 ante excess early power concerns *early* adopters' choices. Excess early power does not 30
31 imply ex post excess inertia: for instance, with two groups we saw that if group 2 opti- 31
32 mally coordinates then there cannot be ex post excess inertia, but if inter-group network 32
33 effects are strong and group 1 optimally coordinates, it has all the power. But the two 33
34 concepts reflect the same force: the stronger ex post inertia will be, the more power 34
35 early adopters have. 35
36

37 Arthur's model predicts excess early power; foresight complicates but does not funda- 37
38 mentally change the picture. Moving first gives commitment: early adopters are pivotal 38
39 (early power), and the more they recognize that later adoptions will have to follow, the 39
40 less sensitive early adopters will be to later preferences. Like inertia, early power can 40
41 be efficient but can readily go too far: with strong network effects, long-run network 41
42 technology choice can be determined by first-mover advantage and by historical small 42
43

1 events.¹⁴¹ With positive (not necessarily small) probability, almost all adopters choose
 2 *A* but total surplus would have been greater had almost all chosen *B*.¹⁴²

3 Lock-in could go the other way, in which case foresight weakens early power: if
 4 group 2 finds adopting *B* a dominant strategy, while group 1 wants to adopt whatever
 5 it expects group 2 to adopt, then group 2 is pivotal.¹⁴³ But that requires network ef-
 6 fects to be strong for group 1 but weak for group 2, so reverse lock-in seems likely to
 7 be rarer and weaker than forward lock-in. Thus Farrell and Saloner (1985) found that,
 8 given preferences, each player is better off moving earlier: this “New Hampshire Theo-
 9 rem” says that earlier adopters’ preferences get more weight than later adopters’ in the
 10 collective outcome,¹⁴⁴ which strongly suggests excess early power.¹⁴⁵

11 In summary, early adopters have the strategic advantage: there is a reasonable pre-
 12 sumption of excess early power at the adopter level. As we see in Section 3.7.2 below,
 13 however, this need not imply that early advantages confer sustained success when spon-
 14 sors of competing standards compete using penetration pricing.

15 3.5.3. *Positive feedback and tipping*

16 We have seen how early choices are powerful, able either to help coordination or to
 17 wield disproportionate influence. Thus any early lead in adoptions (whether strategic or
 18 accidental) will tend to expand rather than to dissipate. Network markets are “tippy”:
 19 early instability and later lock-in.

20 To explore this, consider a continuum of identical adopters who only want to coor-
 21 dinate. There are three kinds of static pure-strategy Nash equilibria: all adopt *A*, all
 22 adopt *B*, and many splintered equilibria in which half adopt *A* and half adopt *B* (and all
 23 are indifferent). Now suppose market shares are randomly perturbed, and at each instant
 24 some adopters can change their move in response to current shares. Then as soon as the
 25 shares are unequal, those who can choose will adopt the majority product; this makes
 26 the half-and-half equilibrium unstable. The point carries over even with some horizontal
 27 product differentiation.¹⁴⁶

30 ¹⁴¹ Thus it can create a “butterfly effect”: a butterfly flapping its wings might cause a hurricane years later
 31 and thousands of miles away.

32 ¹⁴² In principle this might also arise if good *A* is worth more than *B* when each network is small but *B*
 33 is worth more than *A* when each network is large. As Liebowitz and Margolis (1994) observe, there is no
 34 obvious reason to expect that.

35 ¹⁴³ Holmes (1999) shows how adopters who care less than others about network effects (relative to their
 36 preferences between products, or in his case locations) can lead a transition. He uses this in explaining the
 37 migration of the U.S. cotton textile industry. Large groups that can successfully coordinate internally are thus
 38 prime candidates to be pivotal movers and get the best deals. Bresnahan (2001a) explored this in the context
 39 of AOL’s adoption of Internet Explorer during the Netscape–Microsoft browser war.

40 ¹⁴⁴ Holding an early primary, as New Hampshire does, gives a state more influence when bandwagon effects
 41 are important in a national election.

42 ¹⁴⁵ Excess late power (sometimes called *ex ante* excess momentum) is also possible, because the outcome
 43 depends only on ordinal preferences and not on their intensity.

44 ¹⁴⁶ With a finite number of adopters rather than a continuum, the same force prevents equal shares being an
 45 equilibrium at all. See, e.g., Katz and Shapiro (1985, 1994). Echenique and Edlin (2004) show that strategic

1 Although sketchy, such dynamics suggest that re-equilibration by others (which is 1
2 central to indirect network effects) strengthens instability. 2

3 Arthur (1989, 1990) and Arthur and Lane (1993) similarly find that if prices are fixed, 3
4 and adoption decisions depend only on past adoptions (current shares of installed base), 4
5 then one product or technology will come to dominate.^{147,148} 5
6 6

7 3.5.4. Option value of waiting 7 8 8

9 We have seen that early adoption can freeze a technology choice and foreclose what 9
10 would otherwise be later adopters' preferred choices. Above, we asked whether early 10
11 adopters instead ought to defer to the known preferences of later adopters. When those 11
12 preferences (and/or later costs) are not known early on, waiting can thus be efficient. 12
13 Lock-in – even lock-in to a choice that's optimal given available information at the time 13
14 – sacrifices social option value. 14

15 Just as future preferences are often under-weighted by market forces, option value 15
16 will be. And institutions may be less apt to repair this: it is probably easier to acquire 16
17 residual rights in one potential network with a clear future than to internalize the gains 17
18 from waiting for something unpredictable. Whether or not the Dvorak keyboard is better 18
19 than QWERTY, there clearly was a chance in 1888 that something better would later 19
20 appear. How might incentives at that date incorporate this option value – what would 20
21 persuade early generations of typists to wait, or to adopt diverse keyboards, *if* that was 21
22 socially desirable in the long run? In principle the option value might be internalized by 22
23 a century-long monopoly on typing so that the monopoly could price the loss of option 23
24 value into early adoptions, or by a futuristic patent on a range of alternative keyboards 24
25 so that Dr. Dvorak's grandparents could subsidize waiting or diversity. Even if there 25
26 had been many individual long-lived patents on particular keyboards, their proprietors 26
27 would have faced a public-good problem in encouraging waiting. These institutions 27
28 seem far from reality. It might well *not* have been efficient for nineteenth-century typists 28
29 to wait, or to use keyboards they did not like, in order to preserve a more realistic option 29
30 for a different design in 1940. But it is hard to think that the market gave a very good 30
31 *test of whether or not* that would have been desirable. 31

32 Sometimes option value could be preserved by making later products compatible 32
33 with early adoption. Section 3.8 below discusses incentives to do this, but clearly early 33
34 adopters, or a sponsor of a product that they favor, may not want to ensure compatibility 34
35 if they expect ex post inertia (excess or not) under incompatibility, as they gain from 35
36 36

37 37
38 complementarities make mixed-strategy equilibria unstable, unless adopters have perverse beliefs about how 38
39 shares will evolve. 39

40 ¹⁴⁷ In these models, the probability of winning a consumer is a function of prices and shares of installed 40
41 base; this assumption is rationalized by horizontal differentiation. 41

42 ¹⁴⁸ In Ellison and Fudenberg (2003) and Ellison, Fudenberg and Möbius (2004), there may be a plateau of 42
43 non-tipped outcomes from which no player unilaterally wants to move, if buyers dislike (slightly) outnumbering 43
44 sellers more than they like being in a bigger market. 43

1 excess early power. Indeed, Choi (1994b) and Choi and Thum (1998) confirm that pre-emption competition for the New Hampshire first-mover advantage can make adoption
 2 inefficiently fast when moving quickly can drive a bandwagon. Recall however that
 3 adoption may be too slow because of the externality or because early adoption risks
 4 coordination failure.
 5

7 3.6. *Sponsored price and strategy for a single network*

9 Having discussed the demand side of network markets – adopters' choices given the
 10 offers they face – we turn to the supply side. This section primarily discusses a network
 11 monopoly, but most of the insights apply equally to a firm trying to establish its standard
 12 against a rival standard, as Section 3.7 further explores.

13 A sponsor seeking to establish its network has two generic strategies. First, it may
 14 focus selling effort on pivotal adopters, whose choices strongly affect others'. In partic-
 15 ular, when a network involves different *classes of adopters* (for instance a credit card
 16 network that must be adopted by consumers and merchants) a sponsor can choose where
 17 to focus its marketing or price-cutting; and when there are different *adoption dates* a
 18 sponsor can choose (subject to commitment issues) when to do so. Second, a sponsor
 19 might seek to visibly *commit* to ensuring widespread adoption, or otherwise work on
 20 *expectations*.
 21

22 3.6.1. *Pricing to different groups: penetration pricing*

24 First consider separate prices to two classes or groups of adopters with inter-group net-
 25 work effects.¹⁴⁹ These groups might be peers at different dates (early and late adopters),
 26 or two sides of a market. As Rochet and Tirole (2002, in press) and Armstrong (in press)
 27 observe, such two-sided markets include credit cards, brokers, auctions, matchmakers,
 28 conferences, journals, computer platforms, and newspapers.

29 Suppose first that the sponsor simultaneously commits to both prices. Increased sales
 30 to one group raise the other group's demand: the inter-group marginal network effect.
 31 So in broadly Ramsey fashion the optimal price to group 1 will be lower, the more
 32 strongly group 2's demand responds to adoption by group 1 and the more profitable
 33 (endogenously) are sales to group 2, as well as the higher group 1's own demand elas-
 34 ticity (as usual).¹⁵⁰ Thus a single seller's optimal prices to the two groups may well be
 35 asymmetric; indeed, one side often pays zero or below cost.¹⁵¹
 36
 37

38 ¹⁴⁹ We consider only simple prices; Sundararajan (2003) discusses non-linear pricing with network effects.

39 ¹⁵⁰ As we noted in Section 3.3.2, there may be intra-group network effects (or congestion effects if the groups
 40 are different sides of a market). These affect the welfare economics, but for profit-maximizing pricing we can
 41 treat each group as a demand curve.

42 ¹⁵¹ See for instance Parker and Van Alstyne (2005), Schmalensee (2002), Rochet and Tirole (in press). As we
 43 saw in Section 3.3.2 above, first-best prices would be below marginal cost for both groups. Ramsey pricing
 looks qualitatively similar to profit-maximizing pricing because the problems are closely related.

1 At an abstract level this is simply pricing with complementarities, as in Gillette's 1
 2 early strategy of giving away razors and making money on blades [Adams (1978)]; but 2
 3 here the complementarities are between different customers' adoption choices. If there 3
 4 is no single sponsor, implementing an optimal markup structure may require payments 4
 5 between sectors such as the credit card interchange fees discussed in Section 3.2; if 5
 6 that's hard to do well, it can encourage vertical integration. 6

7 With early and late groups the analysis is the same if the seller commits to a price 7
 8 path. For Ramsey-style reasons, low-then-high penetration pricing is privately (and can 8
 9 be socially) efficient in the usual case where early adopters are pivotal. 9

10 Finally, with early and late groups but no commitment, low-high pricing is even 10
 11 further encouraged. The seller will predictably set a second-period price higher than 11
 12 would be optimal ex ante, since ex post it will not take into account the effect on first- 12
 13 period adoption. Thus first-period adopters will expect a high future price, lowering 13
 14 first-period demand; and incompatible competition among sponsors will lower first- 14
 15 period prices in anticipation of the ex post rents. All these forces push towards bargain- 15
 16 then-ripoff penetration pricing, the reverse of Coasean dynamics.¹⁵² 16

17 That commitment problem puts a sponsored network at a disadvantage against an 17
 18 open (competitively supplied) network product in the relatively rare case of reverse 18
 19 lock-in where second-period adopters are pivotal. A proprietary sponsor might then 19
 20 seek even costly forms of commitment such as (delayed) free licensing of a technology 20
 21 [Farrell and Gallini (1988), Economides (1996b)]. But sellers of an open product cannot 21
 22 recoup investment in below-cost early prices, so a sponsored product has an advantage 22
 23 when (as is probably typical) overall adoption responds more sensitively to early prices 23
 24 than to sophisticated predictions of later prices [Katz and Shapiro (1986a)]. 24

25 3.6.2. Single monopoly price 25

26 Above, we separated the two roles of p : each adopter viewed the price facing him in the 26
 27 ordinary way, and based his relevant expectations on the price facing the complementary 27
 28 group. With switching costs, the ex ante and ex post prices are similarly separable when 28
 29 locked-in customers buy a distinct good such as service; otherwise they may have to be 29
 30 equal, as we discussed in Section 2.4. Similarly here prices to two sides of a market are 30
 31 presumably separable, but with two groups of peer adopters they may not be. In that 31
 32 case it is natural to suppress the two groups and simply study overall demand at the 32
 33 given price. 33
 34 34
 35 35

36 36
 37 ¹⁵² Cabral, Salant and Woroch (1999) study monopoly penetration pricing of durable network goods when 37
 38 buyers have rational expectations. In certain classes of example, they find that Coase-conjecture price 38
 39 dynamics tend to predominate over penetration pricing: prices fall rather than rise over time, especially when 39
 40 there is complete information. Bensaïd and Lesne (1996) find however that strong network effects remove the 40
 41 time-consistency Coase problem and cause optimal prices to increase over time. See also Mason (2000) and 41
 42 Choi (1994a). Radner and Sundararajan (2005) study a network monopolist's dynamic pricing problem when 42
 43 adopters expect each period's network size to be equal to last period's; they find extreme bargain-then-ripoff 43
 44 pricing (the monopolist prices at zero until the network reaches its desired size). 44

1 The “fulfilled-expectations demand curve” then matches each price p with those pen- 1
 2 etration levels x such that, when adopters expect penetration x , just x of them will 2
 3 adopt at price p : see e.g. Leibenstein (1950), Rohlfs (1974), Katz and Shapiro (1985), 3
 4 Economides (1996a). Such a demand curve is more elastic than each of the fixed- 4
 5 expectations curves of which it is built [Leibenstein (1950)]. Gabel (1991) suggests that 5
 6 Sony, Betamax’s sponsor in VCRs, may have optimized against a less elastic (perhaps 6
 7 short-run) perceived demand curve because it did not anticipate video-rental network ef- 7
 8 fects. Monopoly deadweight loss may be more severe with network effects: monopoly 8
 9 not only deters marginal adoption, but also lowers surplus of inframarginal adopters.¹⁵³ 9

10 Multiple equilibria in adoption at price p now show up as multiple intersections of 10
 11 the demand curve with a horizontal line at p . To pin down demand at p , one might 11
 12 rule out “unstable” equilibria (at which demand is upward-sloping); but if there is an 12
 13 unstable equilibrium, there are at least two stable equilibria. However one selects an 13
 14 adoption equilibrium for each p , there may well be discontinuous changes in behavior 14
 15 as a parameter such as cost varies continuously, as in catastrophe theory.¹⁵⁴ Even if a 15
 16 network product only gradually becomes cheaper or better over time, it may suddenly 16
 17 acquire critical mass and take off.¹⁵⁵ 17

18 A strategic monopoly seller might persuade adopters to coordinate on the largest 18
 19 equilibrium x given p . If so, we say that the seller can “affect expectations” and pick 19
 20 any (x^e, p) such that x^e is an adoption equilibrium at price p . The next subsection 20
 21 discusses some tactics for affecting expectations in this sense. 21
 22 22

23 3.6.3. Commitment strategies 23

24 24
 25 Since demand depends on expectations, a network sponsor can gain from commitment 25
 26 to size, to inspire confidence and optimism. Commitment can address both the marginal 26
 27 and multiple-equilibrium underadoption problems identified in Section 3.3 above. 27

28 One commitment is simply selling products early on. Sellers boast about (even exag- 28
 29 gerate) sales. To be a useful commitment, sales must be visible and irreversible, so this 29
 30 strategy makes most sense for durables. Network effects typically arise from use, not 30
 31 from mere possession, so dumping (e.g., free) units on the market may be discounted. 31
 32 The most effective sales are to influential adopters whose adoption will boost others’ by 32
 33 the most. 33
 34 34

35 ¹⁵³ Farrell and Shapiro (1992) argue this in a linear example; but Lambertini and Orsini (2001), stressing 35
 36 network quality, reach different conclusions. One problem is that it is not clear what the demand curve “would 36
 37 be” without network effects. Rysman (2004) shows that, even if competition involves splintering, it is better 37
 38 than monopoly in his calibrated model of the market for Yellow Pages. 38

39 ¹⁵⁴ Indeed, if the rational-expectations demand curve has an upward-sloping portion, there is typically no 39
 40 everywhere-continuous selection of adoption equilibrium, even if there is everywhere a locally continuous 40
 41 selection. 41

42 ¹⁵⁵ Rohlfs (2001), Farrell and Shapiro (1992), and Economides and Himmelberg (1995) suggest examples 42
 43 of sudden success that might reflect such tipping. Liebowitz and Margolis (2001) question that interpretation 43
 and argue that price and share dynamics in computer software seem inconsistent with tipping. 43

1 A blunt early-sales strategy is of course *penetration pricing*, as discussed above. As 1
 2 we will see in Section 3.7 below, competition can induce penetration pricing as the 2
 3 form of competition for the market. When a monopoly engages in penetration pricing, 3
 4 however, it would seem to be leaving money on the table relative to convincing early 4
 5 buyers in some other fashion that the long-run network size will be large. Thus we focus 5
 6 here on means to commit to that. 6

7 To encourage early adoption, a seller would like to commit to selling more later 7
 8 than it will then wish to sell, a point made by Katz and Shapiro (1986a) and put in a 8
 9 broader framework by Segal (1999). This kind of commitment strategy can operate even 9
 10 when there is a single equilibrium; commitment shifts the equilibrium. We have already 10
 11 noted some tactics such as second-sourcing that might help such a commitment. One 11
 12 might model commitment in a reduced-form way through assumptions about a spon- 12
 13 sor's strategic variable. Rather than just setting a price, a sponsor might seek to commit 13
 14 to quantities sold or to the utility it will give each (type of) adopter. 14

15 Reputation and general market credibility can help communicate commitment or 15
 16 boost expectations. Another commitment strategy is to open a standard to guarantee 16
 17 competitive future behavior, increasing early adopters' expectations of long-run net- 17
 18 work size. And integration with complementors might visibly improve incentives for 18
 19 supply of complements, as well as facilitate Ramsey-style cross-pricing. 19

20 When there are multiple equilibria, some of the same commitment tactics can help 20
 21 ensure a more favorable equilibrium. Rohlfs (2001) develops a model of irreversible 21
 22 adoption by many small buyers that involves dynamics at two levels. First, at any time 22
 23 buyers adopt if they want to do so given prices and given the current installed base, 23
 24 but they lack foresight and the adoption-equilibrium selection is thus pessimistic: there 24
 25 may be other equilibria with more adoption. In the second kind of dynamics, sponsors 25
 26 try to push the market past critical mass and generate positive feedback. For instance, 26
 27 a sponsor may dump enough units on the market to enter the basin of attraction of a 27
 28 preferred equilibrium. 28

29 In addition to the use of equilibrium-path price discrimination (*penetration pricing*), 29
 30 out-of-equilibrium (*discriminatory*) offers can eliminate an equilibrium that the seller 30
 31 dislikes, as we discuss next and as Segal and Whinston (2000) explored in the context of 31
 32 exclusive dealing. As that case illustrates, these equilibrium-selection tactics can work 32
 33 against buyers when networks compete, whereas in the case of a single network both 33
 34 seller and buyers prefer an equilibrium with more adoption.¹⁵⁶ 34

36 3.6.4. Contingent contracts 36

37
 38 Commitment through contracts could in principle overcome the coordination problem, 38
 39 as Dybvig and Spatt (1983) noted. Suppose a seller offers buyers a contract: "The 39
 40

41 ¹⁵⁶ The reason is that one player's adoption of network *A* hurts – relative to the alternative – those who 41
 42 adopt *B*; thus in Segal's (1999) terms there is a negative externality on non-traders, leading to conflict at 42
 43 equilibrium when offers are public (full commitment by the seller). See also Segal (2003). 43

price is $p < u(N)$ if all other buyers also adopt (which I expect); if not, the price is $p' < u(n_i)$." Each buyer should accept this contract whatever he expects other buyers to do. Of course, p' may have to be (perhaps far) below cost, so the seller will make a loss if some buyers reject the offer. But in principle success depends only on buyers' individual rationality, not on their coordinating.

Likewise, the theory suggests, a contingent contract can profitably attract buyers away from coordination on the wrong network if a better alternative has a residual claimant (sponsor). Thus, suppose that buyers expect one another to adopt A , and that $u_B(n_i) - c_B < u_A(N) - p_A < u_B(N) - c_B$.¹⁵⁷ Seller B offers the contract: "If x of you buy B , the price will be $u_B(x) - u_A(N) + p_A - k$." For $k > 0$, it is a dominant strategy for each buyer to accept, and the contract is profitable if all buyers do so and k is small enough. Indeed, as we noted in the previous subsection, such a contract may inefficiently succeed: Segal (1999) and Jullien (2001) show that, because adoption of B imposes a negative externality on those who continue to buy A , there will be excessive adoption of B even if initial expectations favor A , when B (but not A) can offer public flexible pricing under complete information. But Park (2004a) applies mechanism-design methods and finds that such contingent inducement schemes (and a range of other schemes) will induce less than efficient adoption when the seller has incomplete information about adopters' tastes.

It is not surprising that some flexible contracting can in theory solve coordination problems.¹⁵⁸ At the level of cooperative game theory, network effects are like ordinary economies of scale: in each case a coalition consisting of a seller and x buyers achieves more surplus per buyer as x increases. Indeed, Sutton's (1998, chs. 14.2 and 15.2) models of network effects and learning effects are formally identical. Since simple contracts often enable efficient competition with economies of scale (even dynamically if contestability holds), some contracts would in principle do so with network effects.¹⁵⁹

Contingent contracts might be differently implemented depending on whether adopters make a one-time purchase or continue to buy in order to use the network. When adopters will continue to trade with the seller over time, penetration pricing can become contingent pricing¹⁶⁰; one version is usage-based pricing.¹⁶¹ With one-time purchases, a seller might either charge low prices and later collect top-up fees if the network succeeds, or charge prices consonant with a successful network, promising refunds if the network falls short. Refund promises might not be believed, either because a

¹⁵⁷ Recall here that c_A is the production cost of good A , etc.

¹⁵⁸ Thum (1994) also considers how contract form affects efficiency.

¹⁵⁹ One could also reach the same optimistic view via the Coase Theorem.

¹⁶⁰ Another view of penetration pricing with one-time purchases is that it is an attempt at contingent pricing but sacrifices part of the surplus from early adopters: they "ought to" see that the network will succeed and hence be willing to pay a lot, but they do not.

¹⁶¹ Oren and Smith (1981) and Rohlfs (2001). That is, if each adopter's use of a telecommunications product, say, is proportional to the value he derives from it, then traffic-sensitive pricing may solve the chicken-and-egg problem even at the cost of inefficiently deterring usage given network size. See also Carter and Wright (1999).

nascent *B*-supplier would lack funds for such a large, non-diversifiable risk, or because buyers would suspect fine print in the contract.

Despite the advantages of contingent contracts, they do not seem the norm in network markets.¹⁶² Very low, especially negative, prices may be problematic, as we discussed in Section 2, and the nuisance adopter issue is arguably worse here because network benefits normally hinge on use, not just possession, of the good. Especially if *A* is well established, this can make users' opportunity costs of adopting *B* large and hard to observe. Thus contingent contracts might work better against the single-network chicken-and-egg problem than to help an entrant displace an established network rival.

While cost-side economies of scale often do not raise the coordination issues that we argue are central in network effects, this is not a fact of technology and preferences: it hinges on the contracts used. Thus contract theory should play more role in the study of network effects than it has hitherto, and in particular understanding the use, or lack of use, of contingent contracts would be an important advance.

3.7. Sponsored pricing of competing networks

In incompatible competition firms vie to control expectations. Competition will focus on pivotal customers; these are often early adopters – as with switching costs, where competition is largely for early purchases. Central questions are whether more efficient firms reliably win and whether profits reflect only their efficiency advantage.

3.7.1. Competition with cost/quality differences

Consider incompatible competition with purely vertical differentiation: either a cost difference or a quality difference valued equally by all consumers. First we treat efficiency advantages as fixed over time; in Section 3.7.2 we allow them to vary. Expectations may respond in various ways to quality and price differences: for instance they may track surplus, track quality, track past success, or stubbornly favor one firm.¹⁶³

We say expectations *track surplus* if each buyer expects all others to buy the product that, network effects held constant, offers the most surplus. For instance, suppose firms set prices just once and then there is a sequence of adoption choices by small cohorts. If adopters have similar preferences (agree on which product offers them more surplus if all adopt it), one might expect adoption of that product.¹⁶⁴ Price competition then works just as it would if the products were compatible. The efficient product wins, and (with non-drastring efficiency differences) consumers get the same surplus as they would if the second-best product were offered at average cost and adopted by all. Consumers capture

¹⁶² Arguably this suggests either that there is no problem to be solved, or that (as we suspect) the contracts are problematic. See also Innes and Sexton (1994) and Haruvy and Prasad (2001).

¹⁶³ These terms are from Farrell and Katz (1998).

¹⁶⁴ As we saw in Section 3.4.4, this is the unique subgame-perfect equilibrium. As we argued there, this may not be conclusive; but it is one plausible expectation.

1 the network effect and any economies of scale. Quality competition also is therefore just
2 as under compatibility.¹⁶⁵

3 But this changes dramatically if instead expectations *track quality*. Although this is
4 a static model, this assumption can be motivated because, as Katz and Shapiro (1992)
5 showed, this is the equilibrium if sponsors can adjust prices in response to adoption
6 dynamics: suppose for instance that *A* has higher quality (or lower costs), and that this
7 outweighs the network gain from adoption by a single additional cohort. Then, *A* will
8 not fail through a bandwagon effect that starts because a *few* buyers adopt *B* instead.
9 Rather, such a loss will lead *A*'s sponsor to cut its price to subsequent adopters: it can
10 profitably do what it takes to win, even coming from a bit behind in installed base.¹⁶⁶ So
11 each adopter will recognize that even if he and his cohort adopt product *B*, product *A*
12 will still win the rest of the market. Since no buyer is pivotal, the price to any buyer
13 (or cohort) should not affect expectations. So rational expectations will *track quality*
14 – focus on the network with higher quality (or lower costs) – and ignore any period's
15 prices.

16 In this case, if *A* has higher quality it wins current sales if¹⁶⁷: $u_A(N) - p_A \geq u_B(1) -$
17 c_B , or $p_A - c_A \leq [u_A(N) - u_B(N)] + [u_B(N) - u_B(1)] - [c_A - c_B]$. Its profit is equal
18 to its actual (cost and/or quality) advantage plus the network effect. If *A* visibly *could*
19 make consumers a significantly better offer than can *B*, it need not *actually* match *B*'s
20 offer! Consumers would get more surplus if they all adopted the losing network *B* priced
21 at cost.¹⁶⁸

22 Of course, when such lucrative expectations track quality, firms will compete in-
23 tensely on quality. Consumers gain from additional quality created by the second
24 highest-quality firm.¹⁶⁹ The network effect accrues to the winner, and/or is dissipated
25 in quality competition, which can therefore be socially excessive.

26 Worse, other factors might make consumers expect a product to win the market even
27 after (out of equilibrium) losing a round or two – making expectations stubbornly unre-
28 sponsive to price or performance. For instance, this logic would focus expectations on
29 a firm that plainly *could* dramatically improve its product if necessary – even if it never
30 actually does so. Other forces might include deep pockets, history or reputation, a con-
31 vincing road-map for future products, control of a key complement, control of formal
32

33
34 ¹⁶⁵ Baake and Boom (2001) and Bental and Spiegel (1995) discuss static competition with network effects
35 and quality differentiation when consumers' willingness to pay for quality varies.

36 ¹⁶⁶ Therefore *B* will not attempt penetration pricing: there is no follow-on gain to winning a cohort or two.
37 See Fudenberg et al. (1983) on races without leapfrogging.

38 ¹⁶⁷ We assume that each adopter is of size 1 and that a losing seller is willing to price down to cost.

39 ¹⁶⁸ This is an instance of the principle that pivotal adopters get the surplus: when there are no such buyers,
40 firms can keep the surplus. [Raskovich (2003) argues, on the other hand, that pivotal buyers find themselves
41 saddled with the responsibility of ensuring that a good is actually provided.] In predatory pricing policy, Edlin
42 (2002) discusses how a firm's ability to make a better offer can forestall the need to do so (to consumers'
43 detriment).

44 ¹⁶⁹ As always when competition gives no gross return to investment by a subsequent "loser", there can be
45 equilibria in which only one firm invests. Thus details of the quality competition game may be important.

standards efforts, or marketing activity. As we saw, a seller thus favored by expectations can extract profits commensurate with the network effects, and may thus profitably control the market even with an inferior product or offering – provided, crucially, that its inferiority does not loosen its control of expectations. Such dysfunctional patterns of expectations may be most likely where adopters have dissimilar preferences, hindering attempts (e.g. through talk) to coordinate better.

When expectations thus *stubbornly* favor one firm, it has monopoly-like incentives for quality improvement. Its rivals cannot gain from ordinary innovation. But if B 's quality improves so much that each user will adopt B no matter what he expects others to do, then adopters should now give B the benefit of expectations. Thus A 's rivals have strong incentives for dramatic innovation (Grove's "ten times better").

Thus these models suggest that quality competition can produce stronger incentives for innovation than monopoly (even inefficiently strong incentives), while expectations-dominant firms have incentives for incremental innovation and other firms have little incentive for other than breakthrough innovation.

If expectations track past market success, they reinforce installed base in giving past winners an advantage in future competition. This increases collective switching costs and accentuates the bargain-then-ripoff pattern of dynamic competition.

3.7.2. Competition with cost/quality differences that vary over time

Now suppose that competing networks' efficiency advantages may shift over time. We revisit the inertia questions of Section 3.5 but now when competing networks are strategically priced. In doing so we address the scope for competitive entry (perhaps via penetration pricing) by a sponsored network product that must come from behind in network size and hence (often) in static efficiency, but that might become more efficient than an incumbent if widely adopted.

As we saw in Section 3.5, if early efficiency advantages determine offers to the pivotal early adopters, then a technology with an early lead will beat a technology that will (or may) be better later. This is the New Hampshire Theorem: early power for any given prices. In particular, if each network is competitively supplied, there is excess early power: a bias toward the one that early adopters prefer.

Now suppose instead that network sponsors compete for early adopters through penetration pricing. We describe how competitive penetration pricing can yield efficient adoption choices in favorable circumstances. More realistically, biases can arise in either direction, but we argue that excess early power remains more likely than its opposite.

Suppose that A has costs a_t in period t , while B has costs b_t , and that network effects are strong: second-period adopters would follow first-period adopters if both products were priced at cost, and will pay r for a product compatible with first-period adoption. Finally, suppose that if a firm fails to win first-period sales, it exits (it knows it will lose in the second period). Then A would price as low as $a_1 - (r - a_2)$ to win first-period sales, while B would go down to $b_1 - (r - b_2)$. Consequently, second-period efficiencies feed through efficiently into first-period penetration pricing, and the firm

1 that can more efficiently provide the good in both periods wins sales in both periods, 1
 2 if each cohort optimally coordinates internally and first-period buyers correctly foresee 2
 3 second-period behavior. In this model, collective technology choice is efficient, and the 3
 4 pivotal (first-period) adopters get the benefit of competition.¹⁷⁰ 4

5 How robust is this optimistic result? Second-period efficiency can feed through *more* 5
 6 strongly than is efficient into first-period penetration pricing. In Katz and Shapiro 6
 7 (1986a), a first-period loser does not exit but continues to constrain pricing. Thus the 7
 8 second-period prize for which *A* is willing to price below its cost in the first period is 8
 9 $b_2 - a_2 + \beta$, where β represents a network-size advantage¹⁷¹; similarly *B* expects a 9
 10 second-period prize of $a_2 - b_2 + \beta$ for winning the first period. So firm *A* wins first- 10
 11 period (and hence all) sales if and only if $a_1 - [b_2 - a_2 + \beta] \leq b_1 - [a_2 - b_2 + \beta]$. 11
 12 Second-period efficiency is *double-counted* relative to first-period efficiency, leading 12
 13 to excess late power¹⁷² despite the excess early power for any given prices: strategic 13
 14 pricing here *reverses* the adoption-level bias. 14

15 Or feed-through can be *weaker* than is efficient. There is *no* feed-through when 15
 16 both standards are unsponsored (firms cannot later capture gains from establishing a 16
 17 product). Uncertainty and capital market imperfections can weaken feed-through.¹⁷³ 17
 18 Feed-through is also inefficient if first-period competition is not entirely through better 18
 19 offers but consists of rent-seeking through unproductive marketing. Feed-through can 19
 20 work efficiently even if consumers do not know why they are getting good first-period 20
 21 offers, or do not know the extent of gouging, provided the latter is symmetric. But, as 21
 22 we saw in Section 2, bargain-then-ripoff competition can cause inefficiencies. 22

23 As Katz and Shapiro (1986a) also noted, when one product is sponsored but its rival 23
 24 is not, feed-through is *asymmetric*, biasing the outcome toward the sponsored product. 24
 25 And, as Farrell and Katz (2005) note, feed-through is also asymmetric if *A* would stay 25
 26 in the market for the second period after losing the first, but *B* would exit if it lost the 26
 27 first round.¹⁷⁴ 27

28
 29
 30 ¹⁷⁰ Welfare may still be lower than under compatibility if different products would then be adopted in differ- 30
 31 ent periods, although firms have an incentive to achieve compatibility in that case [Katz and Shapiro (1986b); 31
 see Section 3.8 below].

32 ¹⁷¹ Specifically, β is the difference in value between a network of all consumers and one consisting only of 32
 33 second-generation consumers. With strong network effects, β exceeds second-period cost differences. 33

34 ¹⁷² This is why Katz and Shapiro (1986a) find excess late power (or “new-firm bias”) with sponsored products 34
 35 when network effects are strong. When network effects are weaker, they found a new-firm bias for a different 35
 36 reason. The (“new”) firm with the second-period advantage certainly would win second-period sales if it won 36
 37 first-period sales; but the other firm with the second-period disadvantage might not. The “old” firm would like 37
 to commit to doing so, in order to offer first-period customers a full network, but cannot.

38 ¹⁷³ Feed-through will be weakened (as in switching-cost markets) if firms cannot lower first-period prices 38
 39 enough to pass through all prospective ex post profits to the pivotal early adopters (e.g. because of borrowing 39
 40 constraints, or because negative prices attract worthless demand). 40

41 ¹⁷⁴ Then, *A*’s second-period prize for winning the first period is $r - a_2$, but *B*’s is only $\min[r - b_2, a_2 - b_2 + \beta]$. 41
 42 Thus if $r > a_2 + \beta$, feedthrough is asymmetric and *A* wins both periods if and only if $a_1 - [r - a_2] \leq$ 42
 43 $b_1 - [a_2 - b_2 + \beta]$, or $a_1 + a_2 \leq b_1 + b_2 + [r - a_2 - \beta]$. The last term in brackets is a bias toward the firm 43
 with a reputation for persistence.

1 To summarize, at given prices, network effects cause pivotal adopters' preferences to
 2 be over-weighted; since early adopters are often pivotal, products that appeal to them
 3 fare better than products that appeal comparably to later adopters. That is, there is
 4 typically excess early power for any given prices. But relative efficiencies in serving
 5 non-pivotal adopters may feed through into prices to pivotal adopters, and thus into the
 6 outcome. This feed-through can be zero (as with unsponsored products), weak, cor-
 7 rect (as in the model above where first-round losers exit), or excessive [as in [Katz and](#)
 8 [Shapiro \(1986a\)](#) and [Jullien \(2001\)](#)]. Nevertheless, in general we think feed-through
 9 seems likely to be too weak, even if buyers optimally coordinate: the arguments for
 10 optimal or excessive feed-through put a lot of weight on firms' ability to predict fu-
 11 ture quasi-rents and incorporate them into today's pricing. Perhaps more importantly,
 12 however, feed-through can be asymmetric for reasons unrelated to the qualities of the
 13 competing products, and the asymmetry probably tends to favor established or spon-
 14 sored products over nascent or unsponsored ones.

15 Thus entry by an incompatible product is often hard, and may well be *too* hard even
 16 *given* the incumbent's installed base and *given* incompatibility. Switching costs and
 17 network effects can work in tandem to discourage incompatible entry: switching costs
 18 discourage large-scale entry (which would require the installed base to switch) while
 19 network effects discourage gradual, small-scale entry (offering a small network at first).
 20

21 *A switching-cost analogy* The models above have close switching-cost analogies, al-
 22 though the switching-cost literature has not stressed efficiency differences between
 23 firms. With costs as described above and no network effects or quality differences but
 24 a switching cost s , suppose first that each buyer expects to face a second-period price
 25 p_2 that is independent of which seller he is locked into. Then of course he will buy
 26 the lower-priced product in the first period. If he is correct about second-period pricing
 27 (for instance, if his reservation price r is low enough that switching can never pay, so
 28 $p_2 = r$), then seller A is willing to price down to $a_1 - [p_2 - a_2]$ in the first period, and
 29 similarly for B . Hence, the firm with lower life-cycle costs makes the sale, as efficiency
 30 requires. This is the switching-cost analogy to the model with exit above.¹⁷⁵
 31

32 But if second-period prices are instead constrained by the buyer's option to switch,
 33 then A will price at $b_2 + s$ in the second period if it wins the first, while B will price
 34 at $a_2 + s$ if it does. If myopic buyers do not foresee this difference then second-period
 35 costs are double-counted relative to first-period costs: this is an asymmetric version of
 36 the model in Section 2.3.1 above, and is the switching-cost analogy to [Katz and Shapiro](#)
 37 [\(1986a\)](#). Finally, if second-period prices are constrained by the option to switch and
 38 buyers have rational expectations and know firms' second-period costs, then the buyer
 39 chooses A only if its first-period price is at least $b_2 - a_2$ lower than B 's, and again the
 40 firm with lower lifecycle costs wins.
 41
 42
 43

¹⁷⁵ See also Section 3.2 of [Klemperer \(1995\)](#).

3.7.3. *Static competition when consumers' preferences differ*

Without network effects, or with compatibility, horizontal differentiation has several effects. First, tipping is unlikely: a variety of products make sales. Second, prices reflect each firm's marginal cost and its market power due to the horizontal differentiation (in a Hotelling model, for instance, the level of transport costs). Third, if a seller modestly improves its product, it gets modestly higher share and profits.

With strong network effects and incompatibility, all these lessons change. Buyers want to coordinate and all adopt a single network, though they disagree on which one. If they will succeed in doing so, and if their collective choice is responsive to changes in quality or price, then firms are competing for the market, which blunts horizontal differentiation. Thus, strong proprietary *network effects can sharpen price competition* when expectations are up for grabs and will track surplus¹⁷⁶; Doganoglu and Grzybowski (2004) contrast this with competition-softening switching costs. Product improvement by the leader does not change market shares; nor does marginal product improvement by other firms. If price reflects cost, it will reflect the loser's average cost, because the loser is willing to price down that far in competition for the whole market.

When differentiation is stronger, or network effects weaker, niche minority products such as Apple can survive. Multiple products can also survive if network effects are primarily localized within subgroups of adopters, segmenting the market. But the strategy of selling only to closely-matching buyers is less appealing than under compatibility (or than without network effects), and if network effects strengthen or become less localized, or the dominant network grows, niches may become unsustainable, as speakers of "small" human languages are finding and as Gabel (1987) argues was the case for Betamax.

3.7.4. *Dynamic competition when consumers' preferences differ*

Just as excess early power at fixed prices need not imply excess early power when firms compete in penetration pricing, tipping at given prices might not imply tipping when sponsors price to build or exploit market share. If one network gets ahead, will its sponsor raise price to exploit that lead and thus dissipate it, as (recall Section 2.7.1) happens with switching costs, repeated sales of a single good, and no price discrimination; or will it keep price low and come to dominate the market? The literature suggests the answer is ambiguous. Arthur and Rusczyński (1992) studied this question when firms set prices in a many-period dynamic game; Hanson (1983) considered a similar model. In stochastic duopoly they find that if firms have high discount rates, a large firm tends

¹⁷⁶ Large buyers in oligopoly markets often negotiate discounts in return for exclusivity. One possible explanation is that a "large buyer" is really a joint purchasing agent for many differentiated purchases; exclusivity commits the buyer to ignore product differentiation and thus sharpens price competition. See Dana (2006).

1 to lose share by pricing high for near-term profit. But if firms have lower discount rates, 1
 2 a large firm sets low prices to reinforce its dominant position.¹⁷⁷ 2

3 In summary, strong network effects tend to cause tipping or unstable (positive feed- 3
 4 back) dynamics at given prices (including the case of unsponsored standards and con- 4
 5 stant costs); sometimes, they also do so where sponsors strategically set prices. 5
 6 6

7 3.8. Endogenous network effects: choosing how to compete 7 8 8

9 Incompatibility of competing products can be inevitable, but is often chosen. Why 9
 10 would a firm prefer one form of competition over another? 10

11 When firms do not compete, or when competition is equally fierce either way, effi- 11
 12 ciency effects should normally govern: firms internalize efficiency advantages of com- 12
 13 patibility choices. But competitive effects modify this, and can readily reverse it. Finally, 13
 14 when firms disagree on how to compete, who gets to choose? 14
 15 15

16 3.8.1. Efficiency effects 16 17 17

18 Incompatibility has some obvious inefficiencies. Network benefits are lost if some 18
 19 adopters are unwilling to follow the crowd (network effects are weak) or the market 19
 20 splinters because adopters choose simultaneously or in ignorance. If, on the other hand, 20
 21 the market cleanly tips, it worsens matching of products to consumers when tastes dif- 21
 22 fer or if the market tips the wrong way. When networks' future relative advantages are 22
 23 uncertain, compatibility makes switching easier (whether or not inertia is efficient given 23
 24 incompatibility) and thus preserves option value and reduces adopters' incentives either 24
 25 to wait and see which network wins or to adopt hastily and pre-empt. 25

26 Compatibility can also enable mix-and-match of complements. When the best hard- 26
 27 ware and the best software may not come from the same family, compatibility yields a 27
 28 direct mix-and-match efficiency gain. 28

29 But compatibility need not be efficient. Compatibility may require costly adapters 29
 30 or impose design constraints that may be severe if a standard requires a slow-moving 30
 31 consensus process. Proprietary control of a standard can encourage investment in devel- 31
 32 opment or in penetration pricing. It thus makes sense to supplement thinking directly 32
 33 about the pluses and minuses of compatibility with thinking about firms' competitive 33
 34 incentives. 34
 35 35

36 3.8.2. Competitive effects 36 37 37

38 The first competitive effect is *leveling*: compatibility neutralizes the competitive advan- 38
 39 tage of one firm having a larger installed base or being better at attracting expectations. 39
 40 40
 41 41

42 ¹⁷⁷ Dosi, Ermoliev and Kaniovski (1994) find that market sharing can occur if firms adjust prices in response 42
 43 to market shares according to an exogenous non-optimal rule. 43

1 When firm 1 is larger than firm 2, so $x_1 > x_2$, compatibility boosts the value of firm 1's
 2 product from $u(x_1)$ to $u(x_1 + x_2)$, and firm 2's product from $u(x_2)$ to $u(x_1 + x_2)$. Since
 3 a firm's profit is increasing in the value of its own product and decreasing in that of its
 4 rival, compatibility helps the large firm less and hurts it more than it helps or hurts the
 5 small firm *if* we can take the (expected) sizes x_1 and x_2 as broadly given. So a firm with
 6 a big locked-in installed base, or a firm that is exogenously expected to be big, is apt to
 7 resist compatibility with a smaller but fierce rival.¹⁷⁸

8 Thus the dominant Bell system declined to interconnect with upstart independents
 9 in the early post-patent years of telephone competition in the U.S., and Faulhaber
 10 (2002, 2004) describes AOL's failure to interlink with rivals' instant messaging systems.
 11 Borenstein (2003) similarly argues that interline agreements between airlines, which
 12 let customers buy discount tickets with outbound and return on different airlines, help
 13 smaller airlines much more than larger ones; interlining has declined over time. Bres-
 14 nahan and Greenstein (1999) describes how Word Perfect sought compatibility with the
 15 previously dominant WordStar, but then fought compatibility with its challengers.

16 Second is the *un-differentiating effect*. As in Section 3.7.3, when tipping is likely and
 17 size is (or expectations are) completely up for grabs, incompatibility can neutralize ordi-
 18 nary horizontal differentiation that would soften price competition in compatible com-
 19 petition. Even when it is less efficient, incompatible competition can then be sharper.
 20 But when tipping is unlikely, incompatibility can *create* horizontal differentiation (seg-
 21 ment the market), as in switching-cost markets.¹⁷⁹ Thus firms' incentives will depend on
 22 the likelihood of tipping and on whether expectations are largely exogenous or are sym-
 23 metrically competed for. Real-world frictions, including switching costs, limit short-run
 24 shifts of customers (or expectations), and simple network models that understate such
 25 frictions will thus overestimate the strength of incompatible competition.

26 Third, if each side has proprietary complements that remain fixed independent of
 27 scale, and compatibility enables mix-and-match, duopoly models suggest that firms'
 28 private gains from compatibility exceed the social gains, but this is less clear with more
 29 than two firms (see Section 2.8.4). We digress briefly here to discuss the relationship
 30 between these mix-and-match models and indirect network effects.

31
 32 *Indirect network effects and mix-and-match* Both indirect network effects and the
 33 mix-and-match literature discussed in Section 2.8.4 above study modularity (mix-and-
 34 match) versus proprietary complements in a systems market, but the two literatures are
 35

36
 37 ¹⁷⁸ See for instance Katz and Shapiro (1985), de Palma and Leruth (1996), Crémer, Rey and Tirole (2000),
 38 and Malueg and Schwartz (2006). Belleflamme (1998) explores how the leveling effect varies with the number
 39 of firms and with the form (e.g. Cournot vs Bertrand) of competition. It may be particularly unfortunate if
 40 large players resist compatibility, since they tend to be best at leading bandwagons.

41 ¹⁷⁹ Augereau, Greenstein and Rysman (in press) find that when ISPs chose between incompatible 56kbps
 42 modems, there was less compatibility than random choice would imply in each local market. They attribute
 43 this to ISPs' desire for horizontal differentiation, though it may have been more a switching-cost effect (con-
 44 sumers invested in modems) than a network effect.

1 surprisingly hard to relate; we note some key differences, but future research should 1
 2 develop a more unified understanding. 2

3 When more customers buy “hardware” of type *A*, the demand for *A*-compatible “soft- 3
 4 ware” increases, so there is more profit to be made from providing such software if entry 4
 5 does not dissipate that profit. The mix-and-match literature, like the bundling literature 5
 6 [e.g. Nalebuff (2000)], allows for this profit increase to be captured by the *A*-hardware 6
 7 provider through vertical integration. It then studies pricing and profits when this fact 7
 8 *does not induce additional entry* into *A*-compatible software. 8

9 In contrast, as we discussed in Section 3.1, the indirect network effect literature as- 9
 10 sumes that when more *A*-hardware is sold, the boost in *A*-software demand *does induce* 10
 11 *additional (re-equilibrating) software entry*, making *A*’s hardware more attractive to 11
 12 customers and thus indirectly increasing hardware profits. But a boost in software prof- 12
 13 its is not part of this calculation, both because entry dissipates software profits and 13
 14 because most models assume there is no integration. 14

15 We also note that with indirect network effects, tipping at the hardware level increases 15
 16 software variety while reducing hardware variety.¹⁸⁰ 16

17 3.8.3. Institutions and rules: who chooses? 17

18 If participants disagree on compatibility, who chooses? This question arises at several 18
 19 levels. We pose it primarily as a tussle among competing vendors with different pref- 19
 20 erences over how to compete. Another version of the question pits one vertical layer 20
 21 against another: often customers against vendors. A third version concerns the various 21
 22 means to achieve network benefits. Finally, there may be (as in television) compatibility 22
 23 domestically but not internationally. 23
 24 25

26 i. *Horizontal competitors* Sometimes side payments can be made smoothly enough 26
 27 that the outcome is the one that maximizes *joint* profits. If side payments are fixed 27
 28 or one-shot, efficiency effects and the ferocity/softness of competition will drive the 28
 29 joint decision. And if firms can charge one another running royalties for compatibility, 29
 30 that may itself soften compatible competition. In telecommunications, interconnection 30
 31 (compatibility) is largely compulsory but charges for interconnection are common; 31
 32 Ennis (2002) shows that the curvature of the network-benefit function can determine 32
 33 equilibrium payments, while Hermalin and Katz (2005) show how efficient carrier-to- 33
 34 carrier pricing depends on demand elasticities. Brennan (1997) and Laffont, Rey and 34
 35 Tirole (1998a) ask whether competing firms can use such charges to support monopoly 35
 36 outcomes as non-cooperative equilibria. Similar concerns may arise if firms agree to 36
 37 include one another’s intellectual property in a consensus standard or a patent pool, as 37
 38 39

40 ¹⁸⁰ When indirect network effects are proprietary (mixing and matching is impossible), tipping at the 40
 41 hardware level tends to *improve* the match between customers’ software tastes and the software varieties endoge- 41
 42 nously provided, by increasing the size of the winning hardware platform’s market (though tipping worsens 42
 43 hardware matches). 43

1 Gilbert (2004) stresses.¹⁸¹ But these strategems might be hard to distinguish in practice
2 from side payments to encourage efficient compatibility.

3 In other cases firms choose how to compete non-cooperatively without smooth side
4 payments. As above, any firm wants to offer its customers bigger network benefits, and
5 wants its rival's customers to get smaller network benefits. Thus each firm would like to
6 offer a one-way converter that gives its customers the network benefits of compatibility
7 with its rivals' customers; but would like to block converters in the other direction.¹⁸²

8 In a non-cooperative framework, then, if any firm can block such a one-way converter
9 (e.g. through intellectual property or by secretly or frequently changing an interface),
10 incompatibility results. But if any firm can unilaterally offer a one-way converter, com-
11 patibility results.

12 One can then study incentives for two-way compatibility by thinking of convert-
13 ers in the two directions as inseparably bundled. If both sides want compatibility, or
14 if neither does, the question of who chooses is less prominent. If the firms disagree,
15 incompatibility results if the firm who dislikes compatibility (typically the larger or
16 expectations-dominant player) can prevent it, perhaps through intellectual property or
17 through secrecy or frequent changes of interface.¹⁸³ MacKie-Mason and Netz (2007)
18 explore micro-analytics and institutions of such strategies. On the other hand, compati-
19 bility results if it is easier to imitate than to exclude, as Gabel (1991) argues it was for
20 auto parts.

21 With more than two firms, compatible coalitions may compete against incompatible
22 rivals.¹⁸⁴ Extending Katz and Shapiro (1985), Crémer, Rey and Tirole (2000) describe
23 a dominant firm's incentive for targeted (at one smaller rival) degradation of intercon-
24 nection even if it has no incentive for uniform degradation. But Malueg and Schwartz
25 (2006) observe that a commitment to compatible competition may attract users and
26 deter degradation; Stahl (1982), Dudey (1990), and Schulz and Stahl (1996) similarly
27 discuss incentives to locate near competitors. Cusumano et al. (1992) suggest that this
28 was important in VHS's victory over Betamax.

30 ii. *Vertical locus of compatibility choice* Network benefits can result from choices at
31 various vertical layers (see Section 3.3.2). The efficiency effects may broadly be the
32 same, but competitive effects may differ according to the vertical layer at which com-
33 patibility happens. Many consensus standards organizations bring together participants
34

36 ¹⁸¹ Firms might also sustain price collusion by threatening to withdraw cooperation on compatibility.

37 ¹⁸² See Manenti and Somma (2002). Adams (1978) recounts how Gillette and others fought this battle of
38 one-way converters in the razor/blade market.

39 ¹⁸³ Besen and Farrell (1994) analyze compatibility choice in these terms. Farrell and Saloner (1992) analyzed
40 effects of two-way converters, and also found that converters can reduce static efficiency; Choi (1996b, 1997b)
41 finds that converters can block the transition to a new technology. See also David and Bunn (1987), Kristiansen
42 (1998), and Baake and Boom (2001).

43 ¹⁸⁴ Axelrod et al. (1995), Economides and Flyer (1998), and Farrell and Shapiro (1993) also study coalitions
in network markets with more than two players.

1 from multiple layers, though few true end users attend. The literature's focus on competing interests is a simplification of the web of interests that results. In particular, end users often compete with one another less than do the vendors who sell to them, making it easier for end users than for vendors to agree on standards; but there are typically many end users, making it hard.

6 A value-chain layer with a single dominant provider may also be a relatively likely locus for standards. Thus for instance Intel has championed, even imposed, compatibility in some layers complementary to its dominant position. In favorable cases, a dominant firm has salutary incentives to influence complementary layers.

11 iii. *Means to network benefits* One way to achieve network benefits is that all the players at one vertical layer of a value chain – perhaps vendors, perhaps end users – decide to adopt the same design. That in turn can happen through various mechanisms of coordination, including consensus agreements and sequential bandwagons, but also including tradition, authority, or the use of sunspot-like focal points. Another path to network benefits is the use of converters or adapters,¹⁸⁵ or the related multi-homing strategies such as learning a second language.¹⁸⁶

20 iv. *International trade* Just as firms might choose incompatibility for strategic advantage, so too may nations pursuing domestic (especially producers') benefits at the expense of foreigners'. As in strategic trade with economies of scale, one strategy conscripts domestic consumers as a protected base to strengthen domestic firms in international competition: incompatibility may be a tool to do so, and Crane (1979) argues that this was why governments imposed incompatible standards in color television.¹⁸⁷ As with competing firms, Jensen and Thursby (1996) note that a country may prefer compatibility when its standard is behind, but will shift to preferring incompatibility if it wins. Gandal and Shy (2001) argue that countries will not choose standards autarky but may inefficiently form standardization unions that exclude some countries (as indeed happened in color TV).¹⁸⁸

185 See David and Bunn (1987), Farrell and Saloner (1992), and Choi (1996b, 1997b). Because converters affect competition between otherwise incompatible networks, they may be subsidized or provided by sponsors of networks or may be independently supplied. Because network transitions are not first-best, strange effects can occur: for instance Choi shows that they can retard a transition.

186 See de Palma et al. (1999) Multi-homing is also discussed in the context of two-sided markets by Rochet and Tirole (2003).

187 Farrell and Shapiro (1992) and Rohlfs (2001) discuss this in terms of network effects. Note also that U.S. high-definition standards however contain many "options", which might threaten compatibility.

188 Walz and Woeckener (2003) also find forces for inefficient incompatibility in trade policy. Kubota (1999) notes that transfer payments can make this less likely. Adams (1996), Choi, Lim and Yu (1999), Gandal (2002), Matutes and Regibeau (1996), and Klimenko (2002) also study trade policy with network effects.

3.9. Network effects and policy

Economists disagree on the strength and efficiency of incompatible competition. In our judgment, this largely reflects different views on how well adopters coordinate in the presence of network effects.¹⁸⁹

Optimists expect that adopters can find ways to coordinate on shifting to any better offer that might be available: bandwagon leadership, communication (including through standards organizations), and penetration pricing all help. In a static framework, such good coordination makes the market behave as if there were a single adopter. Relative to compatible competition, incompatible competition then sacrifices variety but neutralizes horizontal differentiation, sharpening competition (possibly even making it fiercer than compatible competition). In a dynamic framework adopters often invest in the standard they adopt, creating individual switching costs. These can interact with network effects to create large collective switching costs, but (as we saw in the simplest models of Section 2) a switching-cost market may perform tolerably well, giving adopters up-front the quasi-rents that will later be gouged out of them.¹⁹⁰ Thus in the optimists' view, competition for the market works well, both in a static framework and dynamically.¹⁹¹

Pessimists see coordination as more likely to fail, or to succeed only by tracking cues other than adopter surplus, notably history. That implies several layers of pessimism about markets with proprietary network effects. First, both splintering and coordination on the "wrong" standard are possible, so that adopters collectively may fail to take the best deal offered. Second, because offering better deals is thus unreliable as a way to win the market, sponsors focus more on attracting expectations in other ways and on arranging to extract more rent if they do win – so sponsors offer less good deals. Third, if expectations track history rather than surplus, collective switching costs come to include the value of network effects, cementing us into what can be badly outdated (or just bad) standards.

Fourth, the strong competitive advantage conferred on a firm that attracts adopters' expectations opens up new avenues for mischief. Exclusive dealing may be especially problematic [see Shapiro (1999)], and product preannouncements by incumbents can block efficient entrants' "narrow windows" of opportunity. There is more than usual scope for predation if, as seems likely, expectations tend to center on the products of a

¹⁸⁹ Pessimists include David (1985) and Arthur (e.g., 1988, 1989) who contend long-run technology choice is inefficiently driven by accidental short-run small events. Liebowitz and Margolis (e.g., 1994, 1996, 1998a, 1998b) are famously optimistic. Between these extremes, Bresnahan and Greenstein (1999) suggests that in the computer industry long periods of lock-in are punctuated by occasional "epochs" of competition for the market when barriers due to network effects and switching costs are much lower than usual because of a shift of the incumbent's standard or a strong independent complement. See also Economides and White (1994).

¹⁹⁰ With individual switching costs, this broadly applies to each adopter. With network effects and collective switching costs, the up-front bargains are targeted on pivotal (typically early) adopters; other adopters may only experience the later rip-offs.

¹⁹¹ Demsetz (1968) is often cited on competition for the market, although the idea goes back to Chadwick (1859). Contestability [Baumol, Panzar and Willig (1983)] is closely related.

1 powerful incumbent firm, because achieving the status of dominant incumbent will be 1
 2 especially profitable (making recoupment more likely, for instance) even after a more 2
 3 efficient rival attempts (re-)entry. And (whether or not incompatible entry would be 3
 4 efficient) the difficulty of entry, especially gradual or small-scale entry, sharpens other 4
 5 competitive concerns. For instance, a merger among incumbents who would jointly 5
 6 control an established standard may do more harm than a similar merger if entrants 6
 7 could be compatible.¹⁹² 7

8 If proprietary network effects coupled with imperfect coordination creates compet- 8
 9 itive problems, might those problems be addressed directly? Of course, but doing so 9
 10 effectively is very hard because the dynamics of markets with proprietary network effects 10
 11 are complex. For example, recognizing that product preannouncements can be 11
 12 anticompetitive in such a market does not point to any reliably helpful policy interven- 12
 13 tions; banning or controlling product preannouncement is obviously problematic.¹⁹³ 13
 14 Likewise, conventional anti-predation policy starts from a suspicion of below-cost pric- 14
 15 ing; but in network industries below-cost pricing early on or to pivotal adopters is a big 15
 16 part of incompatible competition, just as with individual switching costs. Thus, address- 16
 17 ing the problems directly is probably not enough. 17

18 Still taking as given that there will be incompatible competition, a more promis- 18
 19 ing approach probably is to help adopters coordinate better. Information policy (help- 19
 20 ing adopters know what they are choosing), or contract policy (enforcing sponsors' 20
 21 promises) may help; because of the externalities among adopters, private incentives 21
 22 to research alternatives or to extract and enforce promises may well be too low.¹⁹⁴ 22
 23 Sensibly, policy generally seems recently to be moving to protect standard-setting orga- 23
 24 nizations' ability to help focus adopters' expectations. In particular, these organizations 24
 25 have been lamentably spooked by fear of antitrust complaints (notably for taking ac- 25
 26 count of the pricing of patent licenses), and we applaud policies to assuage that fear and 26
 27 to help them protect themselves against patent "trolls" whose patents have inadvertently 27
 28 been written into consensus standards.¹⁹⁵ 28
 29 29

30 ¹⁹² Robinson (1999) describes concerns that the MCI-WorldCom combination would have so large a share 30
 31 in the Internet backbone market that it might profitably deny efficient interconnection. Crémer et al. (2000), 31
 32 Dewatripont and Legros (2000), Ennis (2002), and Malueg and Schwartz (2006) discuss the economics of this 32
 33 concern. 33

34 ¹⁹³ Farrell and Saloner (1986b) and Haan (2003) explore the anticompetitive potential of preannouncements 34
 35 or vaporware; Dranove and Gandall (2003) found preannouncement had a significant effect in DVDs. Fisher 35
 36 (1991) and others have stressed the difficulty of crafting good policies to address this concern. 36

37 ¹⁹⁴ Large, forward-looking buyers can also take into account the effects of their purchases on future market 37
 38 power. For example, government procurement might sensibly eschew offers by sponsors of proprietary net- 38
 39 works (e.g. Microsoft) that are more attractive in the short run (e.g., cheaper, or come with free training) than 39
 40 competing open networks (e.g. based on Linux) if the latter would benefit future competition. 40

41 ¹⁹⁵ Since much of the harm from hold-up is borne downstream, standards organizations have insufficiently 41
 42 strong incentives to avoid these problems (e.g. by requiring disclosure in advance and "reasonable and non- 42
 43 discriminatory" (RAND) licensing). For similar reasons there can be an incentive for firms to agree to charge 43
 44 one another running royalties for compatibility, perhaps by agreeing to incorporate one another's intellectual 44
 45 property in a standard: see Gilbert (2004) and Laffont, Rey and Tirole (1998a, 1998b). 45

1 But we think that even with such policies adopters will often not coordinate well 1
 2 enough to make incompatible competition work efficiently. So the best policy may be 2
 3 to encourage compatibility and compatible competition. This conclusion is reinforced 3
 4 by the fact that – in large part because of the problems above – the incentives of firms, 4
 5 especially dominant firms, are often biased towards incompatibility.¹⁹⁶ Denial of com- 5
 6 patibility is profitable if this allows a firm to retain adopters' expectations and remove 6
 7 them from rivals. 7

8 Sometimes government should mandate a standard to ensure compatibility, just as 8
 9 other organizations often impose internal compatibility (indeed firms enforce internal 9
 10 compatibility by fiat more often than governments), and so avoid splintering or confu- 10
 11 sion or inefficient variety. Most nations do this in broadcasting, all insist that everyone 11
 12 drive on the same side of the road,¹⁹⁷ and many mandate mobile phone standards. But 12
 13 government should not always seek rapid standardization when the merits of compet- 13
 14 ing standards are unclear. Considerations akin to biodiversity can suggest prolonging 14
 15 rather than cutting short market experimentation; the case for mandated standardiza- 15
 16 tion is strongest when technological progress is unlikely (as with weights and measures 16
 17 standards, which side of the road to drive on, or currency).¹⁹⁸ Moreover, government 17
 18 may be inexpert, and standards may need to evolve, and (partly as a result) compliance 18
 19 may not be clear. So governments wisely, we think, seldom intervene to displace an 19
 20 established standard because it was thought inefficient. (And when they do change a 20
 21 standard it is typically to replace a previously mandated standard – as with weights and 21
 22 measures, driving-sides, and currencies – rather than to second-guess a previous market 22
 23 choice.) 23

24 We are therefore most enthusiastic about facilitating, rather than directly requiring, 24
 25 compatibility. Standards organizations help when all want to coordinate, but when pow- 25
 26 erful players resist compatibility we are sympathetic to policies that give more power 26
 27 to complementors and competitors who want compatibility, in the analysis of Sec- 27
 28 tion 3.8. Thus telecommunications policy gives competitors the right of interconnection 28
 29 29

30
 31 ¹⁹⁶ When network effects are indirect, compatibility is part of the broader question of vertical openness: if *A* 30
 32 wants to complement *B*, can *B* say no, or set terms such as exclusivity? The “one monopoly rent theorem” 31
 33 that suggests *B* will choose an efficient policy (because having better complements makes its product more 32
 34 appealing) can fail for a range of reasons [such as price discrimination, see, e.g., Farrell and Weiser (2003)], 33
 35 even absent network effects. But with indirect network effects, vertical integration creates particular concerns 34
 36 if independent complementors can be important potential entrants, as Bresnahan and Greenstein (2001) argue 35
 37 in the computer industry (the trial court in the U.S. Microsoft case echoed this logic with its proposed remedy 36
 38 of breaking up Microsoft into an operating system company and one that would initially sell applications, 37
 39 though the appeals court overturned this). 37

38 ¹⁹⁷ Failure to say which side of the road people should drive would induce confusion (see Section 3.4 above), 38
 39 and saying “drive on the right” without enforcement leads to inefficient variety (those drivers that buck the 39
 40 norm may take account of their own sacrifice of compatibility benefits, but they also spoil those benefits for 40
 41 others). 41

42 Besen and Johnson (1986) argue that government failure to set a standard in AM stereo led to splintering. 41

42 ¹⁹⁸ Cabral and Kretschmer (2007) find that in Arthur's (1989) model it is ambiguous whether policy should 42
 43 retard or accelerate lock-in. 43

1 on regulated terms, and the EU and increasingly the U.S. have done this for computer 1
 2 software.¹⁹⁹ Firms often enforce incompatibility through intellectual property that may 2
 3 have little or no inherent innovative value; in such cases, we favor a right to achieve 3
 4 compatibility despite the intellectual property. 4

5 How do these lessons and views relate to those we suggested for switching-cost mar- 5
 6 kets in Section 2.9 above? In antitrust terms, incompatible competition with network 6
 7 effects tends to increase the risks of exclusion, whereas incompatible competition with 7
 8 switching costs is more apt to soften competition. But in both cases we emerge with a 8
 9 cautious preference for compatible competition, which often has direct efficiency bene- 9
 10 fits and is apt to be more competitive. Firms' own incentives somewhat align with direct 10
 11 efficiency effects but (especially for dominant firms) often include competitive effects 11
 12 with the "wrong sign". Thus one might especially suspect that firms have picked in- 12
 13 compatibility inefficiently if compatibility would be low-cost or would even save costs 13
 14 directly, or if a firm imposes incompatibility while its rivals seek compatibility. 14
 15

16 4. Conclusion 16

17 Switching costs and network effects create fascinating market dynamics and strategic 17
 18 opportunities. They link trades that are not readily controlled by the same contract: 18
 19 future trades in the case of switching costs, and trades between the seller and other buyers 19
 20 in the case of network effects. We have stressed that the result *can* be efficient competi- 20
 21 tion for larger units of business – "competition for the market". Thus neither switching 21
 22 costs nor network effects are inherently and necessarily problematic. But they very of- 22
 23 ten make competition, perhaps especially entry, less effective. So we favor cautiously 23
 24 pro-compatibility public policy. And policymakers should look particularly carefully at 24
 25 markets where incompatibility is strategically chosen rather than inevitable. 25
 26
 27
 28
 29

30 Acknowledgements 30

31 We are grateful to many friends and colleagues for numerous helpful suggestions 31
 32 and comments over several substantial rewrites of this paper since our first 1997 32
 33 draft. Special thanks are due to Alan Beggs, Simon Board, Tim Bresnahan, Yongmin 33
 34 Chen, Matthew Clements, David Gill, Jonathan Good, Moshe Kim, Catherine McNeill, 34
 35 Markus Mobius, Meg Meyer, Tore Nilssen, Hiroshi Ohashi, Pierre Regibeau, Garth Sa- 35
 36 loner, Marius Schwartz, Oz Shy, Rebecca Stone, John Vickers, Matthew White, Miguel 36
 37 Villas-Boas, and the Editors of this volume. Joe Farrell was chief economist at the 37
 38
 39

40
 41 ¹⁹⁹ See Lemley and McGowan (1998a), Menell (2002), and Samuelson and Scotchmer (2002). But Llobet 40
 42 and Manove (2006) argue that because incumbents may build smaller networks if entrants can share them, 41
 43 R&D subsidies are better policy than compatibility rights. Kristiansen and Thum (1997) stress that network 42
 size is a public good in compatible competition. 43

1 Federal Communications Commission 1996–1997 and at the Antitrust Division of the
 2 Department of Justice 2000–2001, and Paul Klemperer served as a Member of the UK
 3 Competition Commission 2001–2005, but all the views expressed are personal ones.

6 References

- 8 **Abreu, D.** (1988). “On the theory of infinitely repeated games with discounting”. *Econometrica* 56, 383–396.
- 9 **Acquisti, A., Varian, H.** (2005). “Conditioning prices on purchase history”. *Marketing Science* 24, 367–381.
- 10 **Adams, R.B.** (1978). *C.K. Gillette: The Man and His Wonderful Shaving Device*. Little Brown & Co., Boston.
- 11 **Adams, M.** (1996). “Norms, standards, rights”. *European Journal of Political Economy* 12, 363–375.
- 12 **Aghion, P., Bolton, P.** (1987). “Contracts as a barrier to entry”. *American Economic Review* 77, 388–401.
- 13 **Ahdieh, R.B.** (2003). “Making markets: Network effects and the role of law in the creation and restructuring
 14 of securities markets”. *Southern California Law Review* 76, 277–350.
- 15 **Ahtiala, P.** (1998). “The optimal pricing of computer software and other products with high switching costs”.
 16 Working Paper. University of Tampere.
- 17 **Anderson, S.P., Leruth, L.** (1993). “Why firms may prefer not to price discriminate via mixed bundling”.
 18 *International Journal of Industrial Organization* 11, 49–61.
- 19 **Anderson, E.T., Kumar, N., Rajiv, S.** (2004). “A comment on: Revisiting dynamic duopoly with consumer
 20 switching costs”. *Journal of Economic Theory* 116, 177–186.
- 21 **Aoki, R., Small J.** (2000). “The economics of number portability: Switching costs and two part tariffs”. In:
 22 *Marching into the New Millenium: Economic Globalization Conference Proceedings*, June 3–4. Tamkank
 23 University.
- 24 **Arbatskaya, M.** (2000). “Behaviour-based price discrimination and consumer switching”. In: Baye, M.R.
 25 (Ed.), *Industrial Organization*. In: *Advances in Applied Microeconomics*, vol. 9. JAI Press, New York,
 26 pp. 149–171.
- 27 **Armstrong, M.** (in press). “Competition in two-sided markets”. *RAND Journal of Economics*. In press.
- 28 **Arthur, W.B.** (1988). “Competing technologies”. In: Dosi, G., Freeman, C., Silverberg, G. (Eds.), *Technical
 29 Change and Economic Theory*. Pinter, London, pp. 590–607.
- 30 **Arthur, W.B.** (1989). “Competing technologies, increasing returns, and lock-in by historical events”. *Econ-
 31 omic Journal* 99, 116–131.
- 32 **Arthur, W.B.** (1990). “Positive feedbacks in the economy”. *Scientific American* (February), 92–99.
- 33 **Arthur, W.B., Lane, D.A.** (1993). “Information contagion”. *Economic and Dynamics and Structural Change* 4,
 34 81–104.
- 35 **Arthur, W.B., Rusczyński, A.** (1992). “Dynamic equilibria in markets with a conformity effect”. *Archives of
 36 Control Sciences* 37, 7–31.
- 37 **Asvanund, A., Clay, K., Krishnan, R., Smith, M.** (2004). “An empirical analysis of network externalities in
 38 peer-to-peer music sharing networks”. *Information Systems Research* 15, 155–174.
- 39 **Augereau, A., Greenstein, S., Rysman, M.** (in press). “Coordination vs. differentiation in a standards war:
 40 56K modems”. *RAND Journal of Economics*. In press.
- 41 **Ausubel, L.** (1991). “The failure of competition in the credit card market”. *American Economic Review* 81,
 42 50–81.
- 43 **Axelrod, R., Mitchell, W., Thomas, R., Bennett, S., Bruderer, E.** (1995). “Coalition formation in standard-
 setting alliances”. *Management Science* 41, 1493–1508.
- Baake, P., Boom, A.** (2001). “Vertical product differentiation, network externalities, and compatibility deci-
 sions”. *International Journal of Industrial Organization* 19, 267–284.
- Bagwell, K.** (2007). “The economic analysis of advertising”. In: Armstrong, M., Porter, R. (Eds.), *Handbook
 of Industrial Organization*, vol. III. North-Holland, Amsterdam (this volume).
- Bagwell, K., Ramey, G.** (1994). “Coordination economies, advertising and search behavior in retail markets”.
American Economic Review 84, 498–517.

- 1 Banerjee, A. (1992). "A simple model of herd behavior". *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 107, 797–817. 1
- 2 Banerjee, A., Summers, L.H. (1987). "On frequent-flyer programs and other loyalty-inducing economic 2
- 3 arrangements". Working Paper. Harvard University. 3
- 4 Barnett, A.H., Kasperman, D.L. (1998). "The simple welfare economics of network externalities and the uneasy 4
- 5 case for subscribership subsidies". *Journal of Regulatory Economics* 13, 245–254. 5
- 6 Basu, K. (1993). "Switching costs and rural credit". In: *Lectures in Industrial Organization Theory*. Black- 6
- 7 wells, Oxford, pp. 202–204. 7
- 8 Basu, K., Bell, C. (1991). "Fragmented duopoly: Theory and applications to backward agriculture". *Journal 8*
- 9 of Development Economics 36, 145–165. 9
- 10 Baumol, W., Panzar, J., Willig, R. (1983). "Contestable markets: An uprising in the theory of industry struc- 10
- 11 ture: Reply". *American Economic Review* 73, 492–496. 11
- 12 Baye, M.R., Kovenock, D., de Vries, C.G. (1992). "It takes two to tango: Equilibria in a model of sales". 12
- 13 *Games and Economic Behavior* 4, 493–510. 13
- 14 Beggs, A. (1989). "A note on switching costs and technology choice". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 37, 14
- 15 437–440. 15
- 16 Beggs, A., Klempere, P.D. (1989). "Multiperiod competition with switching costs". Discussion Paper 45. 16
- 17 Nuffield College, Oxford University. 17
- 18 Beggs, A., Klempere, P.D. (1992). "Multiperiod competition with switching costs". *Econometrica* 60, 651– 18
- 19 666. 19
- 20 Beige, O. (2001). "The structure of coordination: Three essays on network externalities, expert influence and 20
- 21 party-line voting". Ph.D. Dissertation. Haas School of Business, University of California, Berkeley. 21
- 22 Belleflamme, P. (1998). "Adoption of network technologies in oligopolies". *International Journal of Industrial 22*
- 23 Organization 16, 415–444. 23
- 24 Bensaid, B., Lesne, J.P. (1996). "Dynamic monopoly pricing with network externalities". *International Journal 24*
- 25 of Industrial Organization 14, 837–855. 25
- 26 Bental, B., Spiegel, M. (1995). "Network competition, product quality, and market coverage in the presence 26
- 27 of network externalities". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 43, 197–208. 27
- 28 Berg, J.L., Schumny, H. (1990). *An Analysis of the Information Technology Standardization Process: Pro- 28*
- 29 ceedings. Elsevier, Amsterdam. 29
- 30 Berndt, E., Pindyck, R., Azoulay, P. (2003). "Consumption externalities and diffusion in pharmaceutical mar- 30
- 31 kets: Anticancer drugs". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 51, 243–270. 31
- 32 Besen, S.M., Farrell, J. (1991). "The role of the ITU in standardization: Pre-eminence, impotence or rubber 32
- 33 stamp?". *Telecommunications Policy* 15, 311–321. 33
- 34 Besen, S.M., Farrell, J. (1994). "Choosing how to compete: Strategies and tactics in standardization". *Journal 34*
- 35 of Economic Perspectives 8, 117–131. 35
- 36 Besen, S., Johnson, L. (1986). "Compatibility standards, competition, and innovation in the broadcasting 36
- 37 industry". Rand Report, #R-3453-NSF, November. 37
- 38 Besen, S., Saloner, G. (1989). "The economics of telecommunications standards". In: Crandall, R.W., Flamm, 38
- 39 K. (Eds.), *Changing the Rules: Technological Change, International Competition, and Regulations in 39*
- 40 Communications. Brookings Institution, Washington, DC, pp. 177–220. 40
- 41 Besen, S., Saloner, G. (1994). "Compatibility standards and the market for telecommunications services". In: 41
- 42 Thomas, A., Morton, M. (Eds.), *Research Studies. Information Technology and the Corporation of the 42*
- 43 1930s. Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford, pp. 149–183. 43
- 44 Biglaiser, G., Crémer, J., Dobos, G. (2003). "You won't get rich on switching costs alone". Working Paper. 44
- 45 Universities of North Carolina and Toulouse, November. 45
- 46 Bikchandani, S., Hirshleifer, D., Welch, I. (1992). "A theory of fads, fashion, custom, and cultural change in 46
- 47 informational cascades". *Journal of Political Economy* 100, 992–1026. 47
- 48 Bolton, P., Farrell, J. (1990). "Decentralization, duplication, and delay". *Journal of Political Economy* 98, 48
- 49 803–826. 49
- 50 Bonaccorsi, A., Rossi, C. (2002). "The adoption of business to business e-commerce: Heterogeneity and 50
- 51 network externality effects". LEM Working Paper, May. 51

- 1 Borenstein, S. (2003). "Inter-lining and competition in the US airline industry". Working Paper. University of 1
2 California, Berkeley. 2
- 3 Borenstein, S., MacKie-Mason, J.K., Netz, J.S. (1995). "Antitrust policy in aftermarket". Antitrust Law 3
4 Journal 63, 455–482. 4
- 5 Borenstein, S., MacKie-Mason, J.K., Netz, J.S. (2000). "Exercising market power in proprietary aftermar- 5
6 kets". Journal of Economics and Management Strategy 9, 157–188. 6
- 7 Bouckaert, J., Degryse, H. (2004). "Softening competition by inducing switching in credit markets". Journal 7
8 of Industrial Economics 52, 27–52. 8
- 9 Brehm, J.W. (1956). "Post-decision changes in the desirability of alternatives". Journal of Abnormal and 9
10 Social Psychology 52, 384–389. 10
- 11 Brennan, T. (1997). "Industry parallel interconnection agreements". Information Economics and Policy 9, 11
12 133–149. 12
- 13 Bresnahan, T. (2001a). "The economics of the Microsoft case". Working Paper. Stanford University, Depart- 13
14 ment of Economics. 14
- 15 Bresnahan, T. (2001b). "Network effects and Microsoft". Working Paper. Stanford University, Department of 15
16 Economics. 16
- 17 Bresnahan, T., Greenstein, S. (1999). "Technological competition and the structure of the computer industry". 17
18 Journal of Industrial Economics 47, 1–40. 18
- 19 Bresnahan, T., Greenstein, S. (2001). "The economic contribution of information technology: Towards com- 19
20 parative end user studies". Journal of Evolutionary Economics 11, 95–118. 20
- 21 Breuhan, A. (1997). "Innovation and the persistence of technical lock-in". Ph.D. Dissertation. Stanford Uni- 21
22 versity. 22
- 23 Brock, G.W. (1981). The Telecommunications Industry: The Dynamics of Market Structure. Harvard Univ. 23
24 Press, Cambridge. 24
- 25 Bryant, J. (1994). "Coordination Theory, the Stag Hunt, and Macroeconomics". In: Friedman, J.W. (Ed.), 25
26 Problems of Coordination in Economic Activity. Kluwer Academic Publishers, Boston. 26
- 27 Brynjolfsson, E., Kemerer, C. (1996). "Network externalities in microcomputer software: An econometric 27
28 analysis of the spreadsheet market". Management Science 42, 1627–1647. 28
- 29 Budd, C., Harris, C., Vickers, J. (1993). "A model of the evolution of duopoly: Does the asymmetry between 29
30 firms tend to increase or decrease?" Review of Economic Studies 60, 543–753. 30
- 31 Bulow, J., Klemperer, P.D. (1998). "The tobacco deal". In: Brookings Papers on Economic Activity: Micro- 31
32 economics, pp. 323–394. 32
- 33 Bulow, J., Klemperer, P.D. (1999). "The generalized war of attrition". American Economic Review 89, 175– 33
34 189. 34
- 35 Bulow, J., Geanakoplos, J., Klemperer, P.D. (1985a). "Multimarket oligopoly: Strategic substitutes and comple- 35
36 ments". Journal of Political Economy 93, 488–511. 36
- 37 Bulow, J., Geanakoplos, J., Klemperer, P.D. (1985b). "Holding idle capacity to deter entry". Economic Jour- 37
38 nal 95, 178–182. 38
- 39 Cabral, L., Greenstein, S. (1990). "Switching costs and bidding parity in government procurement of com- 39
40 puter systems". Journal of Law, Economics, and Organization 6, 463–469. 40
- 41 Cabral, L., Kretschmer, T. (2007). "Standards battles and public policy". In: Greenstein, S., Stango, V. (Eds.), 41
42 Standards and Public Policy. Cambridge Univ. Press, pp. 329–344. 42
- 43 Cabral, L.M.B., Salant, D.J., Woroch, G.A. (1999). "Monopoly pricing with network externalities". Interna- 43
44 tional Journal of Industrial Organization 17, 199–214. 44
- 45 Calem, P., Mester, L. (1995). "Consumer behavior and the stickiness of credit-card interest rates". American 45
46 Economic Review 85, 1327–1336. 46
- 47 Caminal, R., Matutes, C. (1990). "Endogenous switching costs in a duopoly model". International Journal of 47
48 Industrial Organization 8, 353–374. 48
- 49 Campello, M. (2003). "Capital structure and product markets interactions: Evidence from business cycles". 49
50 Journal of Financial Economics 68, 353–378. 50
- 51 Campello, M., Fluck Z. (2004). "Product market: Performance, switching costs, and liquidation values: The 51
52 real effects of financial leverage". Working Paper. University of Illinois and Michigan State University. 52
53 53

- 1 Cargill, C.F. (1989). Information Technology Standardization. Digital Press, Bedford, MA. 1
- 2 Carlsson, F., Löfgren, A. (2004). "Airline choice, switching costs and frequent flyer programs". Working 2
3 Paper. Gothenburg University, January. 3
- 4 Carlton, D.W., Landes, W.M., Posner, R.A. (1980). "Benefits and costs of airline mergers: A case study". Bell 4
5 Journal of Economics 80, 65–83. 5
- 6 Carter, M., Wright, J. (1999). "Interconnection in network industries". Review of Industrial Organization 14, 6
7 1–25. 6
- 8 Cason, T.N., Friedman, D. (2002). "A laboratory study of customer markets". Advances in Economic Analysis 7
9 and Policy 2. Article 1. <http://www.bepress.com/bejeap/advances/vol2/fiss1/art1>. 8
- 10 Cason, T.N., Friedman, D., Milam, G.H. (2003). "Bargaining versus posted price competition in customer 9
11 markets". International Journal of Industrial Organization 21, 223–251. 10
- 12 Chadwick, E. (1859). "Results of different principles of legislation and administration in Europe: Of competi- 11
13 tion for the field, as compared with competition within the field, of service". Journal of the Statistical 12
14 Society of London 22, 381–420. 13
- 15 Chen, P.-Y. (2005). "Information technology and switching costs". In: Handbook on Economics and Informa- 14
16 tion Systems. Elsevier, Amsterdam. Preliminary Draft. 15
- 17 Chen, Y. (1997). "Paying customers to switch". Journal of Economics and Management Strategy 6, 877–897. 16
- 18 Chen, P.-Y., Hitt, L. (2002). "Measuring switching costs and their determinants in Internet enabled businesses: 17
19 A study of the on-line brokerage industry". Information Systems Research 13, 255–274. 18
- 20 Chen, Y., Rosenthal, R.W. (1996). "Dynamic duopoly with slowly changing customer loyalties". International 19
21 Journal of Industrial Organization 14, 269–296. 20
- 22 Chevalier, J., Scharfstein, D. (1996). "Capital-market imperfections and countercyclical markups: Theory and 21
23 evidence". American Economic Review 86, 703–725. 22
- 24 Choi, J.P. (1994a). "Network externality, compatibility choice, and planned obsolescence". Journal of Indus- 23
25 trial Economics 42, 167–182. 24
- 26 Choi, J.P. (1994b). "Irreversible choice of uncertain technologies with network externalities". RAND Journal 25
27 of Economics 25, 382–401. 26
- 28 Choi, J.P. (1996a). "Pre-emptive R&D, rent dissipation, and the leverage theory". Quarterly Journal of Eco- 27
29 nomics 111, 1153–1181. 28
- 30 Choi, J.P. (1996b). "Do converters facilitate the transition to a new incompatible technology – A dynamic 29
31 analysis of converters". International Journal of Industrial Organization 14, 825–835. 30
- 32 Choi, J.P. (1997a). "Herd behavior, the penguin effect, and the suppression of informal diffusion: An analysis 31
33 of informational externalities and payoff interdependency". RAND Journal of Economics 28, 407–425. 32
- 34 Choi, J.P. (1997b). "The provision of (two-way) converters in the transition process to a new incompatible 33
35 technology". Journal of Industrial Economics 45, 167–182. 34
- 36 Choi, J.P., Thum, M. (1998). "Market structure and the timing of technology adoption with network external- 35
37 ities". European Economic Review 42, 225–244. 36
- 38 Choi, S.C., Lim, K.S., Yu, P.I. (1999). "Strategic joint ventures with developing country in battles for technical 37
39 standards". Japan and the World Economy 11, 135–149. 38
- 40 Chou, C.F., Shy, O. (1990). "Network effects without network externalities". International Journal of Indus- 39
41 trial Organization 8, 259–270. 40
- 42 Chow, G.C. (1995). "Multiperiod competition with switching costs: Solution by Lagrange multipliers". Jour- 41
43 nal of Economic Dynamics and Control 19, 51–57. 42
- 44 Church, J., Gandal, N. (1992). "Network effects, software provision, and standardization". Journal of Indus- 43
45 trial Economics 40, 85–103. 44
- 46 Church, J., Gandal, N. (1993). "Complementary network externalities and technological adoption". Interna- 45
47 tional Journal of Industrial Organization 11, 239–260. 46
- 48 Church, J., King, I. (1993). "Bilingualism and network externalities". Canadian Journal of Economics 26, 47
49 337–345. 48
- 50 Church, J., Gandal, N., Krause, D. (2002). "Indirect network effects and adoption externalities". Working 49
51 Paper 02-30. Foerder Institute for Economic Research. 50

- 1 **Clements, M.** (2004). "Direct and indirect network effects are they equivalent?". *International Journal of* 1
 2 *Industrial Organization* 22, 633–645. 2
- 3 **Cohen, A.** (2005). "Asymmetric information and learning: Evidence from the automobile insurance market". 3
Review of Economics and Statistics 87, 197–207. 3
- 4 **Cooper, R.W.** (1999). *Coordination Games: Complementarities and Macroeconomics*. Cambridge Univ. 4
 5 Press, Cambridge, MA. 5
- 6 **Cooper, R., John, A.** (1988). "Coordinating coordination failures in Keynesian models". *Quarterly Journal of* 6
 7 *Economics* 103, 441–463. 7
- 8 **Crane, R.J.** (1979). *The Politics of International Standards: France and the Color T.V. War*. Norwood, New 8
 9 Jersey. 9
- 10 **Crawford, V.P.** (1995). "Adaptive Dynamics in Coordination Games". *Econometrica* 63, 103–143. 10
- 11 **Crémer, J.** (2000). "Network externalities and universal service obligation in the Internet". *European Eco-* 11
nomic Review 44, 1021–1031. 11
- 12 **Crémer, J., Rey, P., Tirole, J.** (2000). "Connectivity in the commercial Internet". *Journal of Industrial Eco-* 12
nomics 48, 433–472. 12
- 13 **Cusumano, M.A., Mylonadis, Y., Rosenbloom, R.S.** (1992). "Strategic maneuvering and mass market dynam- 13
 14 ics: The triumph of VHS over Beta". *Business History Review* 66, 51–94. 14
- 15 **Dana, J.** (2006). "Buyer groups as strategic commitments". Working Paper. Northwestern University. 15
- 16 **David, P.** (1985). "Clio and the economics of QWERTY". *American Economic Review* 75, 332–337. 16
- 17 **David, P.** (1986). "Narrow windows, blind giants and angry orphans: The dynamics of systems rivalries and 17
 18 dilemmas of technology policy". CEPR Paper #10. Stanford University, March. 18
- 19 **David, P., Bunn, J.A.** (1987). "The economics of gateway technologies and network evolution: Lessons from 19
 20 electricity supply history". *Information Economics and Policy* 3, 165–202. 19
- 21 **David, P., Monroe, H.** (1994). "Standards development strategies under incomplete information". Mimeo. 20
- 22 **David, P., Shurmer, M.** (1996). "Formal standards-setting for global telecommunications and information 21
 22 services towards an institutional regime transformation?". *Telecommunications Policy* 20, 789–815. 22
- 23 **Davis, D.R., Weinstein, D.E.** (2002). "Bones, bombs and breakpoints: The geography of economic activity". 23
American Economic Review 92, 1269–1289. 23
- 24 **Demsetz, H.** (1968). "Why regulate utilities?". *Journal of Law and Economics* 12, 229–239. 24
- 25 **Deneckere, R., Kovenock, D., Lee, R.** (1992). "Model of price leadership based on consumer loyalty". *Journal* 25
 26 *of Industrial Economics* 41, 147–156. 26
- 27 **DeNicolò, V.** (2000). "Compatibility and bundling with generalist and specialist firms". *Journal of Industrial* 27
Economics 48, 177–188. 27
- 28 **de Palma, A., Leruth, L.** (1996). "Variable willingness to pay for network externalities with strategic stan- 28
 29 dardization decisions". *European Journal of Political Economy* 12, 235–251. 29
- 30 **de Palma, A., Leruth, L., Regibeau, P.** (1999). "Partial compatibility with network externalities and double 30
 31 purchase". *Information Economics and Policy* 11, 209–227. 31
- 32 **Dewatripont, M., Legros, P.** (2000). "Mergers in emerging markets with network externalities: The case of 32
 33 telecoms". CIC Working Paper #FS IV 00-23. Wissenschaftszentrum, Berlin. 32
- 34 **Diamond, P.A.** (1982). "Aggregate demand management in search equilibrium". *Journal of Political Econ-* 33
omy 90, 881–894. 34
- 35 **Diamond, P., Maskin, E.** (1979). "An equilibrium analysis of search and breach of contract I: Steady states". 35
Bell Journal of Economics 10, 282–316. 35
- 36 **Dixit, A.K., Shapiro, C.** (1986). "Entry dynamics with mixed strategies". In: Thomas, L.G. (Ed.), *The* 36
 37 *Economics of Strategic Planning: Essays in Honor of Joel Dean*. Lexington Books/Heath, Lexington, 37
 38 MA/Toronto, pp. 63–79. 38
- 39 **Dixit, A.K., Stiglitz, J.** (1977). "Monopolistic competition and optimum product diversity". *American Eco-* 39
nomic Review 67, 297–308. 40
- 41 **Domowitz, I., Steil, B.** (1999). "Automation, trading costs, and the structure of the securities trading industry". 41
Brookings-Wharton Papers on Financial Services 2, 33–92. 41
- 42 **Doganoglu, T.** (2004). "Switching costs, experience goods and dynamic price competition". Working Paper. 42
 43 University of Munich, April. 43

- 1 Doganoglu, T., Grzybowski, L. (2004). "Dynamic duopoly competition with switching costs and network 1
2 externalities". Working Paper. University of Munich, January. 2
- 3 Dosi, G., Ermoliev, Y., Kaniovski, Y. (1994). "Generalized urn schemes and technological dynamics". Journal 3
4 of Mathematical Economics 23, 1–19. 4
- 5 Dranove, D., Gandal, N. (2003). "The DVD vs. DIVX standard war: Network effects and empirical evidence 5
6 of preannouncement effects". Journal of Economics and Management Strategy 12, 363–386. 5
- 7 Dranove, D., White, W.D. (1996). "Specialization, option demand, and the pricing of medical specialists". 6
8 Journal of Economics and Management Strategy 5, 277–306. 7
- 9 Dubé, J.-P., Hitsch, G.J., Rossi, P.E. (2006). "Do switching costs make markets less competitive?" Working 8
9 Paper. Graduate School of Business, University of Chicago. 9
- 10 Dudey, M. (1990). "Competition by choice: The effect of consumer search on firm location decisions". Amer- 10
11 ican Economic Review 80, 1092–1104. 10
- 12 Dybvig, P.H., Spatt, C.S. (1983). "Adoption externalities as public goods". Journal of Public Economics 20, 11
12 231–247. 12
- 13 Eber, N. (1999). "Switching costs and implicit contracts". Journal of Economics (Zeitschrift-für- 13
14 Nationalökonomie) 69, 159–171. 14
- 15 Echenique, F., Edlin, E. (2004). "Mixed equilibria in games of strategic complements are unstable". Journal 15
16 of Economic Theory 118, 61–79. 16
- 17 Economides, N. (1989). "Desirability of compatibility in the absence of network externalities". American 17
18 Economic Review 79, 1165–1181. 17
- 19 Economides, N. (1996a). "The economics of networks". International Journal of Industrial Organization 14, 18
19 673–699. 19
- 20 Economides, N. (1996b). "Network externalities, complementarities, and invitations to enter". European Jour- 20
21 nal of Political Economy 12, 211–233. 20
- 22 Economides, N., Flyer, F. (1998). "Equilibrium coalition structures in markets for network goods". Annales 21
22 d'Economie et de Statistique 49/50, 361–380. 22
- 23 Economides, N., Himmelberg, C. (1995). "Critical mass and network evolution in telecommunications". In: 23
24 Brock, G.W. (Ed.), *Toward a Competitive Telecommunications Industry: Selected Papers from the 1994*
25 *Telecommunications Policy Research Conference*. Lawrence Erlbaum Associates Manwah, New Jersey. 25
- 26 Economides, N., Salop, S. (1992). "Competition and integration among complements, and network market 26
27 structure". Journal of Industrial Economics 40, 105–123. 26
- 28 Economides, N., Siow, A. (1988). "The division of markets is limited by the extent of liquidity (spatial com- 27
28 petition with externalities)". American Economic Review 78, 108–121. 28
- 29 Economides, N., White, L.J. (1994). "Networks and compatibility: Implications for antitrust". European Eco- 29
30 nomic Review 38, 651–662. 30
- 31 Edlin, A. (2002). "Stopping above-cost predatory pricing". Yale Law Journal 111, 941–991. 31
- 32 Einhorn, M.A. (1992). "Mix and match compatibility with vertical product dimensions". RAND Journal of 32
33 Economics 23, 535–547. 32
- 34 Einhorn, M.A. (1993). "Biases in optimal pricing with network externalities". Review of Industrial Organiza- 33
34 tion 8, 741–746. 34
- 35 Ellison, G. (2005). "A model of add-on pricing". Quarterly Journal of Economics 120, 585–637. 35
- 36 Ellison, G., Fudenberg, D. (1993). "Rules of thumb and social learning". Journal of Political Economy 101, 36
36 612–643. 36
- 37 Ellison, G., Fudenberg, D. (1995). "Word-of-mouth communication and social learning". Quarterly Journal 37
38 of Economics 110, 93–125. 38
- 39 Ellison, G., Fudenberg, D. (2000). "The Neo-Luddite's lament: Excessive upgrades in the software industry". 39
40 RAND Journal of Economics 31, 253–272. 40
- 41 Ellison, G., Fudenberg, D. (2003). "Knife-edge or plateau: When do market models tip?". Quarterly Journal 41
42 of Economics 118, 1249–1278. 41
- 42 Ellison, G., Fudenberg, D., Möbius, M. (2004). "Competing auctions". Journal of the European Economic 42
43 Association 2, 30–66. 43

- 1 Elzinga, G., Mills, D. (1998). "Switching costs in the wholesale distribution of cigarettes". *Southern Economic Journal* 65, 282–293. 1
- 2 2
- 3 Elzinga, G., Mills, D. (1999). "Price wars triggered by entry". *International Journal of Industrial Organization* 17, 179–198. 3
- 4 4
- 5 Ennis, S. (2002). "Network connection and disconnection". U.S. Department of Justice Working Paper #02-5. 5
- 6 Evans, D., Schmalensee, R. (2001). "Some economic aspects of antitrust analysis in dynamically competitive industries". NBER Working Paper #W8268. 6
- 7 Evans, D., Fisher, F.M., Rubinfeld, D.L., Schmalensee, R.L. (2000). "Did Microsoft harm consumers? – Two opposing views". AEI-Brookings Joint Center for Regulatory Studies. 7
- 8 Farrell, J. (1986). "A note on inertia in market share". *Economics Letters* 21, 73–75. 8
- 9 Farrell, J. (1987). "Cheap talk, coordination and entry". *RAND Journal of Economics* 18, 34–39. 9
- 10 Farrell, J. (1993). "Choosing the rules for formal standardization". Working Paper. University of California, Berkeley, Department of Economics. 10
- 11 11
- 12 Farrell, J. (2006). "Efficiency and competition between payment instruments". *Review of Network Economics* 5, 19–44. 12
- 13 13
- 14 Farrell, J., Gallini, N.T. (1988). "Second-sourcing as a commitment: Monopoly incentives to attract competition". *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 103, 673–694. 14
- 15 Farrell, J., Katz, M.L. (1998). "The effects of antitrust and intellectual property law on compatibility and innovation". *Antitrust Bulletin* 43, 609–650. 15
- 16 16
- 17 Farrell, J., Katz, M.L. (2005). "Competition or predation? Consumer coordination, strategic pricing, and price floors in network markets". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 53, 203–232. 17
- 18 18
- 19 Farrell, J., Saloner, G. (1985). "Standardization, compatibility and innovation". *RAND Journal of Economics* 16, 70–83. 19
- 20 20
- 21 Farrell, J., Saloner, G. (1986a). "Installed base and compatibility: Innovation, product preannouncements, and predation". *American Economic Review* 76, 940–955. 21
- 22 Farrell, J., Saloner, G. (1986b). "Standardization and variety". *Economics Letters* 20, 71–74. 22
- 23 Farrell, J., Saloner, G. (1988). "Coordination through committees and markets". *RAND Journal of Economics* 19, 235–252. 23
- 24 24
- 25 Farrell, J., Saloner, G. (1992). "Converters, compatibility, and the control of interfaces". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 40, 9–35. 25
- 26 Farrell, J., Shapiro, C. (1988). "Dynamic competition with switching costs". *RAND Journal of Economics* 19, 123–137. 26
- 27 27
- 28 Farrell, J., Shapiro, C. (1989). "Optimal contracts with lock-in". *American Economic Review* 79, 51–68. 28
- 29 Farrell, J., Shapiro, C. (1992). "Standard setting in high-definition television". In: *Brookings Papers on Economic Activity, Microeconomics*, pp. 1–77. 29
- 30 Farrell, J., Shapiro, C. (1993). "The dynamics of bandwagons". In: Friedman, J.W. (Ed.), *Problems of Coordination in Economic Activity*. Kluwer Academic Publishers, Boston, pp. 149–184. 30
- 31 31
- 32 Farrell, J., Shapiro, C. (2001). "Scale economies and synergies in horizontal merger analysis". *Antitrust Law Journal* 68, 685–710. 32
- 33 33
- 34 Farrell, J., Simcoe, T. (2007). "Choosing the rules for formal standardization". Working Paper. University of California, Berkeley. 34
- 35 35
- 36 Farrell, J., Weiser, P. (2003). "Modularity, vertical integration, and open access policies: Towards a convergence of antitrust and regulation in the Internet age". *Harvard Journal of Law and Technology* 17, 85–135. 36
- 37 Farrell, J., Monroe, H.K., Saloner, G. (1998). "The vertical organization of industry: System competition versus component competition". *Journal of Economics and Management Strategy* 7, 143–182. 37
- 38 38
- 39 Faulhaber, G. (2002). "Network effects and merger analysis: Instant messaging and the AOL-Time Warner case". *Telecommunications Policy* 26, 311–333. 39
- 40 40
- 41 Faulhaber, G. (2004). "Access and network effects in the new economy: AOL-Time Warner". In: Kwoka, J., White, L. (Eds.), *The Anti-trust Revolution*. Oxford University Press, pp. 453–475. 41
- 42 Federal Trade Commission (2000). "Entering the 21st century: Competition policy in the world of B2B electronic marketplaces: A report". The Commission, Washington, DC. 42
- 43 43

- 1 **Fernandes, P.** (2001). "Essays on customer loyalty and on the competitive effects of frequent-flyer pro- 1
grammes". Ph.D. Thesis. European University Institute. 2
- 3 **Fisher, F.M.** (1991). "Organizing industrial organization: Reflections on the handbook of industrial organiza- 3
tion". In: Brookings Papers on Economic Activity, Microeconomics, pp. 201–225. 4
- 4 **Fisher, F.M.** (2000). "The IBM and Microsoft cases: What's the difference? ". American Economic Review 90, 4
180–183. 5
- 6 **Fisher, E.O'N., Wilson, C.A.** (1995). "Price competition between two international firms facing tariffs". In- 6
ternational Journal of Industrial Organization 13, 67–87. 7
- 8 **Fishman, A., Rob, R.** (1995). "The durability of information, market efficiency and the size of firms". Inter- 8
national Economic Review 36, 19–36. 9
- 9 **Fitoussi, J.-P., Phelps, E.** (1988). *The Slump in Europe: Reconstructing Open Economy Theory*. Blackwells, 9
Oxford. 10
- 11 **Froot, K.A., Klemperer, P.D.** (1989). "Exchange rate pass-through when market share matters". American 11
Economic Review 79, 637–654. 12
- 13 **Fudenberg, D., Tirole, J.** (1984). "The fat-cat effect, the puppy-dog ploy and the lean and hungry look". 13
American Economic Review 74, 361–366. 14
- 14 **Fudenberg, D., Tirole, J.** (2000). "Customer poaching and brand switching". RAND Journal of Economics 31, 14
634–657. 15
- 16 **Fudenberg, D., Gilbert, R., Stiglitz, J., Tirole, J.** (1983). "Preemption, leapfrogging and competition in patent 16
races". European Economic Review 22, 3–31. 17
- 18 **Gabaix, X., Laibson, D.** (2006). "Shrouded attributes, consumer myopia and information suppression in com- 18
petitive markets". Quarterly Journal of Economics 121, 505–540. 19
- 20 **Gabel, H.L.** (1987). *Product Standardization and Competitive Strategy*. North-Holland, Amsterdam. 20
- 21 **Gabel, H.L.** (1991). *Competitive Strategies for Product Standards*. McGraw-Hill, London. 21
- 22 **Gabrielsen, T.S., Vagstad, S.** (2003). "Consumer heterogeneity, incomplete information and pricing in a 22
duopoly with switching costs". Information Economics and Policy 15, 384–401. 22
- 23 **Gabrielsen, T.S., Vagstad, S.** (2004). "On how size and composition of customer bases affect equilibrium in a 23
duopoly with switching costs". Review of Economic Design 9, 59–71. 24
- 25 **Gabszewicz, J., Pepall, L., Thisse, J.** (1992). "Sequential entry, with brand loyalty caused by consumer 25
learning-by-doing-using". Journal of Industrial Economics 40, 397–416. 26
- 26 **Galbi, D.A.** (2001). "Regulating prices for shifting between service providers". Information Economics and 26
Policy 13, 191–198. 27
- 28 **Gallini, N., Karp, L.** (1989). "Sales and consumer lock-in". *Economica* 56, 279–294. 28
- 29 **Gandal, N.** (1994). "Hedonic price indexes for spreadsheets and an empirical test for network externalities". 29
RAND Journal of Economics 25, 160–170. 30
- 30 **Gandal, N.** (1995a). "A selective survey of the indirect network externalities: A discussion". *Research in Law* 30
and Economics 17, 23–31. 31
- 32 **Gandal, N.** (1995b). "Competing compatibility standards and network externalities in the PC software mar- 32
ket". *Review of Economics and Statistics* 77, 599–603. 33
- 34 **Gandal, N.** (2001). "The dynamics of competition in the Internet search engine market". *International Journal* 34
of Industrial Organization 19, 1103–1117. 35
- 35 **Gandal, N.** (2002). "Compatibility, standardization, and network effects: Some policy implications". *Oxford* 35
Review of Economic Policy 18, 80–91. 36
- 37 **Gandal, N., Shy, O.** (2001). "Standardization policy and international trade". *Journal of International Eco-* 37
nomics 53, 363–383. 38
- 39 **Gandal, N., Kende, M., Rob, R.** (2000). "The dynamics of technological adoption in hardware/software sys- 39
tems: The case of compact disc players". RAND Journal of Economics 31, 43–61. 40
- 40 **Gandal, N., Salant, D., Waverman, L.** (2003). "Standards in wireless telephone networks". *Telecommunica-* 40
tions Policy 27, 325–332. 41
- 42 **Gans, J.S., King, S.P.** (2001). "Regulating endogenous customer switching costs". *Contributions to Theoreti-* 42
cal Economics 1 (1). <http://www.bepress.com/bejte/contributions/vol1/iss1/art1>. 43

- 1 **Gans, J., King, S., Woodbridge, G.** (2001). "Numbers to the people: Regulation, ownership, and local number
2 portability". *Information Economics and Policy* 13, 167–180.
- 3 **Garcia Marinoso, B.** (2001). "Technological incompatibility, endogenous switching costs and lock-in". *Journal*
4 *of Industrial Economics* 49, 281–298.
- 5 **Garcia Marinoso, B.** (2003). "Endogenous switching costs and exclusive systems: A reply". *Review of Net-*
6 *work Economics* 1, 36–40.
- 7 **Gates, B., Myrhvold, N., Rinearson, P.** (1995). *The Road Ahead*. Viking, New York.
- 8 **Gawer, A., Henderson, R.** (2005). "Platform owner entry and innovation in complementary markets: Evidence
9 from Intel". NBER Working Paper 11852.
- 10 **Gehrig, T., Stenbacka, R.** (2002). "Introductory offers in a model of strategic competition". Working Paper.
11 University of Freiburg and Swedish School of Economics, Helsinki.
- 12 **Gehrig, T., Stenbacka, R.** (2004a). "Differentiation-induced switching costs and poaching". *Journal of Eco-*
13 *nomics and Management Strategy* 13, 635–655.
- 14 **Gehrig, T., Stenbacka, R.** (2004b). "Information sharing and lending market competition with relation-
15 ship benefits and poaching". Working Paper. University of Freiburg and Swedish School of Economics,
16 Helsinki.
- 17 **Gehrig, T., Stenbacka, R.** (2005). "Two at the top: Quality differentiation in markets with switching costs".
18 CEPR Discussion Paper #4996. Universität Freiburg and Swedish School of Economics.
- 19 **Gerlach, H.A.** (2004). "Announcement, entry, and preemption when consumers have switching costs". *RAND*
20 *Journal of Economics* 35, 184–202.
- 21 **Gilbert, R.J.** (2004). "Antitrust for patent pools: A century of policy evolution". *Stanford Technology Law*
22 *Review*.
- 23 **Gilbert, R.J., Katz, M.L.** (2001). "An economist's guide to U.S. v. Microsoft". *Journal of Economic Perspec-*
24 *tives* 15, 25–44.
- 25 **Gilbert, R.J., Klemperer, P.D.** (2000). "An equilibrium theory of rationing". *RAND Journal of Economics* 31,
26 1–21.
- 27 **Gneezy, U., Rottenstreich, Y.** (2004). "The power of the focal point is limited: Even minor pay off asymmetry
28 yields massive coordination failure". Working Paper. University of Chicago Business School.
- 29 **Goerke, L., Holler, M.J.** (1995). "Voting on standardisation". *Public Choice* 83, 337–351.
- 30 **Good, J.B.** (2006). "The incentive for a dominant firm to innovate". M. Phil. Thesis. Oxford University.
- 31 **Goolsbee, A., Klenow, P.J.** (2002). "Evidence on learning and network externalities in the diffusion of home
32 computers". *Journal of Law and Economics* 45, 317–344.
- 33 **Gottfries, N.** (2002). "Market shares, financial constraints, and pricing behavior in the export market". *Eco-*
34 *nomica* 276, 583–607.
- 35 **Gowrisankaran, G., Akerberg, D.** (in press). "Quantifying equilibrium network externalities in the ACH
36 banking industry". *RAND Journal of Economics*.
- 37 **Gowrisankaran, G., Stavins, J.** (2004). "Network externalities and technology adoption: Lessons from elec-
38 tronic payments". *RAND Journal of Economics* 35, 260–276.
- 39 **Green, E.J., Porter, R.H.** (1984). "Noncooperative collusion under imperfect price information". *Economet-*
40 *rica* 52, 87–100.
- 41 **Green, J., Scotchmer, S.A.** (1986). "Switching costs as an explanation for price dispersion". Working Paper.
42 Graduate School of Public Policy, University of California, Berkeley.
- 43 **Greenstein, S.M.** (1993). "Did installed base give an incumbent any (measurable) advantage in federal com-
puter procurement". *RAND Journal of Economics* 24, 19–39.
- Greenstein, S.M., Rysman, M.** (2004). "Testing for agglomeration and dispersion". *Economics Letters* 86,
405–411.
- Grindley, P.** (1995). *Standards Strategy and Policy: Cases and Stories*. Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford.
- Grove, A.** (1996). *Only the Paranoid Survive*. Doubleday Publishing.
- Gruber, H., Verboven, F.** (2001). "The evolution of markets under entry and standards regulation – The case
of global mobile telecommunications". *International Journal of Industrial Organization* 19, 1189–1212.
- Guadagni, P., Little, J.** (1983). "A logit model of brand choice calibrated on scanner data". *Marketing Sci-*
ence 1, 203–238.

- 1 **Guibourg, G.** (2001). "Interoperability and network externalities in electronic payments". Sveriges Riksbank
2 Working Paper Series, September, #126. 2
- 3 **Haan, M.** (2003). "Vaporware as a means of entry deterrence". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 51, 345–358. 3
- 4 **Hakenes, H., Peitz, M.** (in press). "Observable reputation trading". *International Economic Review*. 4
- 5 **Hanson, W.A.** (1983). "Bandwagons and orphans: Dynamic pricing of competing technological systems sub-
6 ject to decreasing costs". Working Paper. Stanford University. 5
- 7 **Hartigan, J.C.** (1995). "Perverse consequences of the GATT: Export subsidies and switching costs". *Econom-
8 ica* 63, 153–161. 6
- 9 **Hartman, R., Teece, D.** (1990). "Product emulation strategies in the presence of reputation effects and net-
10 work externalities: Some evidence from the minicomputer industry". *Economics of Innovation and New
11 Technology* 1, 157–182. 7
- 12 **Haruyv, E., Prasad, A.** (2001). "Optimal freeware quality in the presence of network externalities: An evolu-
13 tionary game theoretical approach". *Journal of Evolutionary Economics* 11, 231–248. 8
- 14 **Haucap, J.** (2003). "Endogenous switching costs and exclusive systems applications". *Review of Network
15 Economics* 1, 29–35. 9
- 16 **Hemenway, D.** (1975). *Industrywide Voluntary Product Standards*. Ballinger Publishing Co., Cambridge. 10
- 17 **Hermalin, B., Katz, M.** (2005). "Customer or complementor? Intercarrier compensation with 2-sided bene-
18 fits". Working Paper. University of California, Berkeley. 11
- 19 **Holmes, T.J.** (1990). "Consumer investment in product specific capital: The monopoly case". *Quarterly Jour-
20 nal of Economics* 105, 789–801. 12
- 21 **Holmes, T.J.** (1999). "How industries migrate when agglomeration economies are important". *Journal of
22 Urban Economics* 45, 240–263. 13
- 23 **Innes, R., Sexton, R.** (1994). "Strategic buyers and exclusionary contracts". *American Economic Review* 84,
24 566–584. 14
- 25 **Israel, M.A.** (2005). "Tenure dependence in consumer–firm relationships: An empirical analysis of consumer
26 departures from automobile insurance firms". *RAND Journal of Economics* 36, 165–192. 15
- 27 **Jacoby, J., Chestnut, R.W.** (1978). *Brand Loyalty: Measurement and Management*. John Wiley and Sons, New
28 York. 16
- 29 **Jeitschko, T.D., Taylor, C.R.** (2001). "Local discouragement and global collapse: A theory of coordination
30 avalanches". *American Economic Review* 9, 208–244. 17
- 31 **Jensen, R., Thursby, M.** (1996). "Patent races, product standards, and international competition". *International
32 Economic Review* 37, 21–49. 18
- 33 **Jullien, B.** (2001). "Competing in network industries: Divide and conquer". Working Paper. IDEI and GRE-
34 MAQ, University of Toulouse. 19
- 35 **Kahan, M., Klausner, M.** (1996). "Path dependence in corporate contracting: Increasing returns, herd behav-
36 ior, and cognitive biases". *Washington University Law Quarterly* 74, 347. 20
- 37 **Kahan, M., Klausner, M.** (1997). "Standardization and innovation in corporate contracting (or "the economics
38 of boilerplate")". *Virginia Law Review* 83, 713. 21
- 39 **Kahin, B., Abbate, J.** (1995). *Standards Policy for Information Infrastructure*. MIT Press, Cambridge. 22
- 40 **Kahn, A.E., Shew, W.B.** (1987). "Current issues in telecommunications regulation: Pricing". *Yale Journal on
41 Regulation* 4, 191–256. 23
- 42 **Karaca-Mandic, P.** (2004). "Estimation and evaluation of externalities and complementarities". Ph.D. Disserta-
43 tion. University of California, Berkeley. 24
- 44 **Katz, M.** (2001). "Network effects, interchange fees, and no-surcharge rules in the Australian credit and
45 charge card industry". Commissioned report, Reserve Bank of Australia. 25
- 46 **Katz, M.L., Shapiro, C.** (1985). "Network externalities, competition and compatibility". *American Economic
47 Review* 75, 424–440. 26
- 48 **Katz, M.L., Shapiro, C.** (1986a). "Product compatibility choice in a market with technological progress".
49 *Oxford Economic Papers* 38, 146–165. 27
- 50 **Katz, M.L., Shapiro, C.** (1986b). "Technology adoption in the presence of network externalities". *Journal of
51 Political Economy* 94, 822–841. 28

- 1 **Katz, M.L., Shapiro, C.** (1992). "Product introduction with network externalities". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 40, 55–83. 1
- 2 **Katz, M.L., Shapiro, C.** (1994). "System competition and network effects". *Journal of Economic Perspectives* 8, 93–115. 2
- 3 **Kauffman, R., Wang, Y.M.** (1999). "Network externalities and the determinants of network survival". MIS 3
- 4 **Research Center Working Paper 99-03.** 4
- 5 **Kim, B.-D., Shi, M., Srinivasan, K.** (2001). "Reward programs and tacit collusion". *Marketing Science* 20, 5
- 6 99–120. 6
- 7 **Kim, J.-Y., Koh, D.-H.** (2002). "Attracting the rival's customers in a model with switching costs". *Japanese* 7
- 8 **Economic Review** 53, 134–139. 8
- 9 **Kim, M., Klinger, D., Vale, B.** (2003). "Estimating switching costs: The case of banking". *The Journal of* 9
- 10 **Financial Intermediation** 12, 25–56. 10
- 11 **Klausner, M.** (1995). "Corporations, corporate law, and networks of contracts". *Virginia Law Review* 81, 11
- 12 757–852. 12
- 13 **Klein, B., Crawford, R.G., Alchian, A.A.** (1978). "Vertical integration, appropriable rents, and the competitive 13
- 14 **contracting process**". *Journal of Law and Economics* 21, 297–326. 14
- 15 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1983). "Consumer switching costs and price wars". Working Paper. Stanford Graduate 15
- 16 **School of Business.** 16
- 17 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1987a). "Markets with consumer switching costs". *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 102, 17
- 18 375–394. 17
- 19 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1987b). "The competitiveness of markets with switching costs". *RAND Journal of Eco-* 18
- 20 **nomics** 18, 138–150. 18
- 21 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1987c). "Entry deterrence in markets with consumer switching costs". *Economic Journal* 19
- 22 **(Supplement)** 97, 99–117. 20
- 23 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1988). "Welfare effects of entry into markets with switching costs". *Journal of Industrial* 21
- 24 **Economics** 37, 159–165. 22
- 25 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1989). "Price wars caused by switching costs". *Review of Economic Studies* 56, 405–420. 23
- 26 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1992). "Equilibrium product lines: Competing head-to-head may be less competitive". 24
- 27 **American Economic Review** 82, 740–755. 24
- 28 **Klemperer, P.D.** (1995). "Competition when consumers have switching costs". *Review of Economic Stud-* 25
- 29 **ies** 62, 515–539. 26
- 30 **Klemperer, P.D.** (in press a). "Switching costs". In: Durlauf, S.N., Blume, L.E. (Eds.) *The New Palgrave:* 27
- 31 **A Dictionary of Economics**, second ed., Palgrave-Macmillan, Basingstoke. 27
- 32 **Klemperer, P.D.** (in press b). "Network effects". In: Durlauf, S.N., Blume, L.E. (Eds.), *The New Palgrave:* 28
- 33 **A Dictionary of Economics**, second ed., Palgrave-Macmillan, Basingstoke. 29
- 34 **Klemperer, P.D., Padilla, A.J.** (1997). "Do firms' product lines include too many varieties?". *RAND Journal* 30
- 35 **of Economics** 28, 472–488. 31
- 36 **Klemperer, P.D., Png, I.** (1986). "Frequent-flyer plans: Marketing device with insidious effects". *Los Angeles* 32
- 37 **Times. Section IV, June 8, 3.** 32
- 38 **Klimenko, M.** (2002). "Strategic interoperability standards and trade policy in industries with network exter- 33
- 39 **nalities**". IRPS Working Paper. 34
- 40 **Knittel, C.R.** (1997). "Interstate long distance rate: Search costs, switching costs and market power". *Review* 35
- 41 **of Industrial Organization** 12, 519–536. 35
- 42 **Koh, D.-H.** (1993). "Competition by endogenous switching time". UCLA Graduate School of Management 36
- 43 **Working Paper.** 37
- 44 **Kornish, L.** (2006). "Technology choice and timing with positive network effects". *European Journal of Op-* 38
- 45 **erational Research** 173, 268–282. 39
- 46 **Kretschmer, T.** (2001). "Competition, inertia and network effects". INSEAD Working Paper. 40
- 47 **Kristiansen, E.G.** (1998). "R&D in the presence of network externalities: Timing and compatibility". *RAND* 41
- 48 **Journal of Economics** 29, 531–547. 41
- 49 **Kristiansen, E.G., Thum, M.** (1997). "R&D incentives in compatible networks". *Journal of Economics* 65, 42
- 50 55–78. 43

- 1 **Krugman, P.** (1991a). *Geography and Trade*. Leuven University Press/MIT Press, Cambridge. 1
- 2 **Krugman, P.** (1991b). "History versus expectations". *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 106, 651–667. 2
- 3 **Kubota, K.** (1999). "Trade negotiations in the presence of network externalities". Mimeo. World Bank – 3
Country Economics Department. 4
- 4 **Laffont, J.J., Rey, P., Tirole, J.** (1998a). "Network competition. I. Overview and nondiscriminatory pricing". 4
RAND Journal of Economics 29, 1–37. 5
- 5 **Laffont, J.J., Rey, P., Tirole, J.** (1998b). "Network competition. II. Price discrimination". *RAND Journal of* 6
Economics 29, 38–56. 7
- 6 **Lal, R., Matutes, C.** (1994). "Retail pricing and advertising strategies". *Journal of Business* 67, 345–370. 8
- 7 **Lambertini, L., Orsini, R.** (2001). "Network externalities and the overprovision of quality by a monopolist". 8
Southern Economic Journal 67, 969–982. 9
- 8 **Langlois, R.N.** (1992). "External economies and economic progress: The case of the microcomputer indus- 10
try". *Business History Review* 66, 1–50. 11
- 9 **Larkin, I.** (2004). "Switching costs and competition in enterprise software: Theory and evidence". Working 12
Paper. UC Berkeley. 13
- 10 **Lee, B.** (1997). "Markets with consumer switching benefits". Working Paper. Management Research Lab, 14
Korea Telecom. 15
- 11 **Lee, R.** (2003). "The adoption of standards with incomplete information". Harvard Undergraduate Thesis 15
(Economics). 16
- 12 **Lee, S.-Y.T., Png, I.P.L.** (2004). "Buyer shopping costs and retail pricing: An indirect empirical test". *Review* 17
of Marketing Science 2. <http://www.bepress.com/romsjournal/vol2/iss1/art6>. 18
- 13 **Lehr, W.** (1995). "Compatibility standards and interoperability: Lessons from the Internet". In: Kahin, B., 19
Abbate, J. (Eds.), *Standards Policy for Information Infrastructure*. MIT Press, Cambridge, pp. 121–147. 20
- 14 **Leibenstein, H.** (1950). "Bandwagon, snob and Veblen effects in the theory of consumers' demand". *Quarterly* 20
Journal of Economics 64, 183–207. 21
- 15 **Lemley, M.A.** (2002). "Intellectual property rights and standard setting organizations". *California Law Re-* 22
view 90, 1889–1980. 23
- 16 **Lemley, M.A., McGowan, D.** (1998a). "Legal implications of network economic effects". *California Law* 24
Review 86, 479–612. 25
- 17 **Lemley, M.A., McGowan, D.** (1998b). "Could Java change everything? The competitive propriety of a prop- 25
rietary standard". *Antitrust Bulletin* 43, 715–773. 26
- 18 **Lerner, J., Tirole, J.** (2006). "A model of forum shopping". *American Economic Review* 96, 1091–1113. 27
- 19 **Lewis, T.R., Yildirim, H.** (2005). "Managing switching costs in multiperiod procurements with strategic buy- 28
ers". *International Economic Review* 46, 1233–1269. 29
- 20 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (1990). "The fable of the keys". *Journal of Law and Economics* 33, 1–25. 30
- 21 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (1994). "Network externality: An uncommon tragedy". *Journal of Economic* 30
Perspectives 8, 133–150. 31
- 22 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (1995). "Path dependence, lock-in and history". *Journal of Law Economics* 32
and Organization 11, 205–226. 33
- 23 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (1996). "Should technology choice be a concern of antitrust policy?". *Harvard* 34
Journal of Law and Technology 9, 284–317. 35
- 24 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (1998a). "Network effects and externalities". In: *The New Palgrave Dictionary* 35
of Economics and the Law, vol. II. MacMillan, Basingstoke, pp. 671–674. 36
- 25 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (1998b). "Path dependence". In: *The New Palgrave Dictionary of Economics* 37
and the Law, vol. III. MacMillan, Basingstoke, pp. 17–23. 38
- 26 **Liebowitz, S.J., Margolis, S.E.** (2001). *Winners, Losers and Microsoft: Competition and Antitrust in High* 39
Technology, second ed. The Independent Institute, Oakland, CA, USA. 40
- 27 **Llobet, G., Manove, M.** (2006). "Network size and network capture". Working Paper. CEMFI and Boston 40
University. 41
- 28 **Lofaro, A., Ridyard, D.** (2003). "Switching costs and merger assessment – Don't move the goalposts". *Euro-* 42
pean Competition Law Review 6, 268–271. 43

- 1 MacKie-Mason, J.K., Metzler, J. (1999). "Links between vertically related markets: ITS vs. Kodak". In: 1
2 Kwoka, J., White, L. (Eds.), *The Antitrust Revolution*. Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford. 2
- 3 MacKie-Mason, J., Netz, J. (2007). "Manipulating interface standards as an anti-competitive strategy". In: 3
4 Greenstein, S., Stango, V. (Eds.), *Standards and Public Policy*. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, UK, 4
5 pp. 231–259. 5
- 6 Malueg, D., Schwartz, M. (2006). "Compatibility incentives of a large network facing multiple rivals". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 54, 527–567. 6
- 7 Manenti, F.M., Somma, E. (2002). "One-way compatibility, two-way compatibility and entry in network 7
8 industries". Working Paper. Southern European Research in Economic Studies, Series #4. 8
- 9 Mankiw, N.G., Whinston, M.D. (1986). "Free entry and social inefficiency". *RAND Journal of Economics* 17, 9
10 48–58. 10
- 11 Manski, C. (1993). "Identification of endogenous social effects: The reflection problem". *Review of Economic 11
12 Studies* 60, 531–542. 11
- 12 Mason, R. (2000). "Network externalities and the Coase conjecture". *European Economic Review* 44, 1981– 12
13 1992. 13
- 14 Mason, R., Valletti, T. (2001). "Competition in communication networks: Pricing and regulation". *Oxford 14
15 Review of Economic Policy* 17, 389–415. 14
- 15 Matutes, C., Regibeau, P. (1988). "Mix and match: Product compatibility without network externalities". 15
16 *RAND Journal of Economics* 19, 221–234. 16
- 17 Matutes, C., Regibeau, P. (1992). "Compatibility and bundling of complementary goods in a duopoly". *Journal of 17
18 Industrial Economics* 40, 37–54. 18
- 19 Matutes, C., Regibeau, P. (1996). "A selective review of the economics of standardization: Entry deterrence, 19
20 technological progress and international competition". *European Journal of Political Economy* 12, 183– 20
21 209. 21
- 22 Menell, P. (2002). "Envisioning copyright law's digital future". *New York Law Review* 62 (3). 22
- 23 Milgrom, P., Roberts, J. (1990). "Rationalizability, learning, and equilibrium in games with strategic comple- 22
24 mentarities". *Econometrica* 58, 1255–1277. 23
- 24 Miles D. (2004). "The UK mortgage market: Taking a longer-term view". Report for the UK Treasury. The 24
25 Stationery Office, UK. 24
- 25 Moshkin, N., Shachar, R. (2000). "Switching cost or search cost?". Working Paper #3-2000. Foerder Institute 25
26 for Economic Research. 26
- 27 Murphy, K., Shleifer, A., Vishny, R. (1989). "Industrialization and the big push". *Journal of Political Econo- 27
28 my* 97, 1003–1026. 28
- 29 Nalebuff, B. (2000). "Competing against bundles". In: Hammond, P.J., Myles, G.D. (Eds.), *Incentives, Orga- 29
30 nization, and Public Economics*. Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford, pp. 323–335. 29
- 30 Nalebuff, B. (in press). "Bundling as an entry deterrent". *Quarterly Journal of Economics*. 30
- 31 Nelson, P. (1970). "Information and consumer behavior". *Journal of Political Economy* 78, 311–329. 31
- 32 Nilssen, T. (1992). "Two kinds of consumer switching costs". *RAND Journal of Economics* 23, 579–589. 32
- 33 Nilssen, T. (2000). "Consumer lock-in with asymmetric information". *International Journal of Industrial Or- 33
34 ganization* 18, 641–666. 33
- 34 Ochs, J. (1995). "Coordination problems". In: Kagel, J., Roth, A. (Eds.), *The Handbook of Experimental 34
35 Economics*. Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton, pp. 195–251. 35
- 36 OECD (1991). *Information Technology Standards: The Economic Dimension*. Paris. 36
- 37 Office of Fair Trading (2003). "Switching costs: Annex C". Economic Discussion Paper #5. London, UK. 37
- 38 Ohashi, H. (2003). "The role of network externalities in the U.S. VCR market, 1978–1986". *Journal of Eco- 38
39 nomics and Management Strategy* 12, 447–494. 38
- 39 Oren, S.S., Smith, S.A. (1981). "Critical mass and tariff structure in electronic communications markets". *The 39
40 Bell Journal of Economics* 12, 467–487. 40
- 41 Ostrovsky, M., Schwarz, M. (2005). "The adoption of standards under uncertainty". *RAND Journal of Eco- 41
42 nomics* 4, 816–832. 41
- 42 Padilla, A.J. (1992). "Mixed pricing in oligopoly with consumer switching costs". *International Journal of 42
43 Industrial Organization* 10, 393–412. 43

- 1 **Padilla, A.J.** (1995). "Revisiting dynamic duopoly with consumer switching costs". *Journal of Economic* 1
2 *Theory* 67, 520–530. 2
- 3 **Palfrey, T.** (1983). "Bundling decisions by a multiproduct monopolist with incomplete information". *Econo-* 3
4 *metrica* 51, 463–483. 4
- 5 **Panzar, J., Wildman, S.S.** (1995). "Network competition and the provision of universal service". *Industrial* 5
6 *and Corporate Change* 4, 711–719. 6
- 7 **Panzar, J.C., Willig, R.C.** (1981). "Economies of scope". *American Economic Review* 71, 268–272. 7
- 8 **Park, I.-U.** (2004a). "A simple inducement scheme to overcome adoption externalities". *Contributions to* 8
9 *Theoretical Economics* 4: Article 3. <http://www.bepress.com/bejte/contributions/vol4/iss1/art3>. 9
- 10 **Park, S.** (2004b). "Quantitative analysis of network externalities in competing technologies: The VCR case". 10
11 *Review of Economics and Statistics* 86, 937–945. 11
- 12 **Park, M.J.** (2005). "The economic impact of wireless number portability". Working Paper. SIEPR 04-017, 12
13 Stanford University. 13
- 14 **Parker, G., Van Alstyne, M.** (2005). "Two-sided network effects: A theory of information product design". 14
15 *Management Science* 51, 1494–1504. 15
- 16 **Pereira, P.** (2000). "Price dynamics with consumer search and cost volatility". Working Paper. University of 16
17 Madrid. 17
- 18 **Phelps, E., Winter, S.** (1970). "Optimal price policy under atomistic competition". In: Phelps, E. (Ed.), *Mi-* 18
19 *croeconomic Foundations of Employment and Inflation Theory*. Norton, New York, pp. 309–337. 19
- 20 **Porter, M.E.** (1980). *Competitive Strategy*. Macmillan Publishing Co., New York. 20
- 21 **Porter, M.E.** (1985). *Competitive Advantage*. Macmillan Publishing Co., New York. 21
- 22 **Postrel, S.R.** (1990). "Competing networks and proprietary standards: The case of quadrasonic sound". 22
23 *Journal of Industrial Economics* 39, 169–185. 23
- 24 **Radin, M.J.** (2002). "Online standardization and the integration of text and machine". *Fordham Law Re-* 24
25 *view* 70, 1125. 25
- 26 **Radner, R.** (2003). "Viscous demand". *Journal of Economic Theory* 112, 189–231. 26
- 27 **Radner, R., Sundarajan, A.** (2005). "Dynamic pricing of network goods with boundedly rational con- 27
28 sumers". Working Paper. Stern School of Business. 28
- 29 **Raskovich, A.** (2003). "Pivotal buyers and bargaining position". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 51, 405–426. 29
- 30 **Rasmusen, E., Ramseyer, J.M., Wiley, J.** (1991). "Naked exclusion". *American Economic Review* 81, 1137– 30
31 1145. 31
- 32 **Ribstein, L., Kobayashi, B.** (2001). "Choice of form and network externalities". *William & Mary Law Re-* 32
33 *view* 43, 79–140. 33
- 34 **Robinson, C.** (1999). "Network effects in telecommunications mergers: MCI WorldCom merger: Pro- 34
35 tecting the future of the Internet, before the Practising Law Institute, San Francisco, CA, August". 35
36 <http://www.usdoj.gov/atr/public/speeches/3889.htm>. 36
- 37 **Rochet, J.C., Tirole, J.** (2002). "Cooperation among competitors: The economics of credit card associations". 37
38 *RAND Journal of Economics* 33, 1–22. 38
- 39 **Rochet, J.C., Tirole, J.** (2003). "Platform competition in two-sided markets". *Journal of the European Eco-* 39
40 *nomic Association* 1, 990–1029. 40
- 41 **Rochet, J.C., Tirole, J.** (in press). "Two-sided markets: A progress report". *RAND Journal of Economics*. 41
- 42 **Rohlf, J.** (1974). "A theory of interdependent demand for a communications service". *Bell Journal of Eco-* 42
43 *nomics* 5, 16–37. 43
- 44 **Rohlf, J.** (2001). *Bandwagon Effects in High Technology Industries*. MIT Press, Cambridge. 44
- 45 **Rosenstein-Rodan, P.** (1943). "Problems of industrialization of Eastern and South-Eastern Europe". *The Eco-* 45
46 *nomic Journal* 53, 202–211. 46
- 47 **Rosenthal, R.** (1980). "A model in which an increase in the number of sellers leads to a higher price". *Econo-* 47
48 *metrica* 48, 1575–1580. 48
- 49 **Rosse, J.N.** (1967). "Daily newspapers, monopolistic competition, and economies of scale". *American Eco-* 49
50 *nomic Review, Papers and Proceedings* 57, 522–533. 50
- 51 **Rubinfeld, D.** (2003). "Maintenance of Monopoly: US v. Microsoft (2001)". In: Kwoka, J.E., White, L.J. 51
52 (Eds.), *The Antitrust Revolution*. Oxford Univ. Press, Oxford. 52

- 1 **Rysman, M.** (2004). "Competition between networks: A study of the market for yellow pages". *The Review* 1
2 *of Economic Studies* 71, 483–512. 2
- 3 **Saloner, G.** (1990). "Economic issues in computer interface standardization". *Economics of Innovation and* 3
4 *New Technology* 1, 135–156. 4
- 5 **Saloner, G., Shepard, A.** (1995). "Adoption of technologies with network effects: An empirical examination
6 of the adoption of automated teller machines". *RAND Journal of Economics* 20, 479–501. 5
- 7 **Samuelson, P., Scotchmer, S.** (2002). "The law and economics of reverse engineering". *Yale Law Journal* 111,
8 1575–1664. 7
- 9 **Sapir, A., Sekkat, K.** (1995). "Exchange rate regimes and trade prices: Does the EMS matter?". *Journal of* 8
10 *International Economics* 38, 75–94. 9
- 11 **Saxenian, A.** (1994). *Regional Advantage*. Harvard Univ. Press, Cambridge. 10
- 12 **Scharfstein, D., Stein, J.** (1990). "Herd behavior and investment". *American Economic Review* 80, 465–479. 11
- 13 **Schelling, T.C.** (1960). *The Strategy of Conflict*. Harvard Univ. Press, Cambridge. 11
- 14 **Schelling, T.C.** (1978). *Micromotives and Macrobehavior*. Norton, New York. 12
- 15 **Schlesinger, H., von der Schulenburg, J.M.G.** (1993). "Consumer information and decisions to switch insur-
16 ers". *The Journal of Risk and Insurance* 60, 591–615. 13
- 17 **Schmalensee, R.** (1982). "Product differentiation advantages of pioneering brands". *American Economic Re-* 14
18 *view* 72, 349–365. 15
- 19 **Schmalensee, R.** (2000). "Antitrust issues in Schumpeterian industries". *American Economic Review* 90,
20 192–196. 16
- 21 **Schmalensee, R.** (2002). "Payment systems and interchange fees". *Journal of Industrial Economics* 50, 103–
22 122. 17
- 23 **Schulz, N., Stahl, K.** (1996). "Do consumers search for the highest price? Oligopoly equilibrium and
24 monopoly optimum in differentiated product markets". *RAND Journal of Economics* 3, 542–562. 19
- 25 **Schwartz, M., Vincent, D.** (2006). "The no-surcharge rule and card user rebates: Vertical control by a payment
26 network". *Review of Network Economics* 5, 72–102. 20
- 27 **Seetharaman, P.B., Che, H.** (in press). "Price competition in markets with consumer variety seeking". *Mar-* 21
28 *keting Science*. 22
- 29 **Seetharaman, P.B., Ainslie, A., Chintagunta, P.K.** (1999). "Investigating household state dependence effects
30 across categories". *Journal of Marketing Research* 36, 488–500. 23
- 31 **Segal, I.** (1999). "Contracting with externalities". *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 114, 337–388. 24
- 32 **Segal, I.** (2003). "Coordination and discrimination in contracting with externalities: Divide and conquer?".
33 *Journal of Economic Theory* 113, 147–181. 25
- 34 **Segal, I.R., Whinston, M.D.** (2000). "Naked exclusion: Comment". *American Economic Review* 90, 296–311. 26
- 35 **Selten, R.** (1965). "Spieltheoretische behandlung eines Oligopolmodells mit nachfrägetragheit". *Zeitschrift* 27
36 *für die Gesamte Staatswissenschaft* 121, 301–324 and 667–689. 28
- 37 **Shaffer, G., Zhang, Z.J.** (2000). "Pay to switch or pay to stay: Preference-based price discrimination in mar-
38 kets with switching costs". *Journal of Economics and Management Strategy* 9, 397–424. 29
- 39 **Shapiro, C.** (1995). "Aftermarkets and consumer welfare: Making sense of Kodak". *Antitrust Law Journal* 63,
40 483–512. 30
- 41 **Shapiro, C.** (1999). "Exclusivity in network industries". *George Mason Law Review*, Spring. 31
- 42 **Shapiro, C., Teece, D.J.** (1994). "Systems competition and aftermarkets: An economic analysis of Kodak".
43 *The Antitrust Bulletin* 39, 135. 32
- 44 **Shapiro, C., Varian, H.R.** (1998). *Information Rules – A Strategic Guide to the Network Economy*. Harvard
45 *Business School Press*, Boston. 33
- 46 **Sharpe, S.A.** (1990). "Asymmetric information, bank lending and implicit contracts: A stylized model of
47 customer relationships". *Journal of Finance* 45, 1069–1087. 34
- 48 **Sharpe, S.A.** (1997). "The effect of consumer switching costs on prices: A theory and its application to the
49 bank deposit market". *Review of Industrial Organization* 12, 79–94. 35
- 50 **Shi, M., Chiang, J., Rhee, B.** (2006). "Price competition with reduced consumer switching costs: The case of
51 "wireless number portability" in the cellular phone industry". *Management Science* 52, 27–38. 36

- 1 **Shilony, Y.** (1977). "Mixed pricing in oligopoly". *Journal of Economic Theory* 14, 373–388. 1
- 2 **Shum, M.** (2004). "Does advertising overcome brand loyalty? Evidence from the breakfast-cereals market". 2
- 3 *Journal of Economics & Management Strategy* 13, 241–272. 3
- 4 **Shurmer, M.** (1993). "An investigation into sources of network externalities in the packaged PC software 4
- 5 market". *Information Economics and Policy* 5, 231–251. 4
- 6 **Shy, O.** (1996). "Technology revolutions in the presence of network externalities". *International Journal of* 5
- 7 *Industrial Organization* 14, 785–800. 6
- 8 **Shy, O.** (2001). *The Economics of Network Industries*. Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge. 7
- 9 **Shy, O.** (2002). "A quick-and-easy method for estimating switching costs". *International Journal of Industrial* 8
- 10 *Organization* 20, 71–87. 9
- 11 **Simcoe, T.** (2003). "Committees and the creation of technical standards". Working Paper. University of Cali- 10
- 12 fornia, Berkeley, Haas School of Business. 10
- 13 **Skott, P., Jepsen, G.T.** (2000). "Paradoxical effects of drug policy in a model with imperfect competition and 11
- 14 switching costs". *Journal of Economic Behaviour and Organization* 48, 335–354. 12
- 15 **Spence, A.M.** (1976). "Product selection, fixed costs, and monopolistic competition". *Review of Economic* 13
- 16 *Studies* 43, 217–235. 13
- 17 **Squire, L.** (1973). "Some aspects of optimal pricing for telecommunications". *Bell Journal of Economics* 4, 14
- 18 515–525. 15
- 19 **Stahl, K.** (1982). "Differentiated products, consumer search, and locational oligopoly". *Journal of Industrial* 16
- 20 *Economics* 37, 97–113. 17
- 21 **Stango, V.** (2002). "Pricing with consumer switching costs: Evidence from the credit card market". *Journal of* 18
- 22 *Industrial Economics* 50, 475–492. 19
- 23 **Stigler, G.** (1951). "The division of labor is limited by the extent of the market". *Journal of Political Econo-* 20
- 24 *my* 59, 185–193. 20
- 25 **Stigler, G.** (1964). "A theory of oligopoly". *The Journal of Political Economy* 72, 44–61. 21
- 26 **Stiglitz, J.E.** (1989). "Imperfect information in the product market". In: Schmalensee, R., Willig, R.D. (Eds.), 22
- 27 *Handbook of Industrial Organization*, vol. 1. North-Holland, Amsterdam, pp. 769–847. 23
- 28 **Sundararajan, A.** (2003). "Network effects, nonlinear pricing and entry deterrence". Working Paper. Stern 24
- 29 School of Business, New York University. 25
- 30 **Stole, L.A.** (2007). "Price discrimination in competitive environments". In: Armstrong, M., Porter, R. (Eds.), 26
- 31 *Handbook of Industrial Organization*, vol. III. North-Holland, Amsterdam (this volume). 26
- 32 **Sutton, J.** (1980). "A model of stochastic equilibrium in a quasi-competitive industry". *Review of Economic* 27
- 33 *Studies* 47, 705–722. 28
- 34 **Sutton, J.** (1998). *Technology and Market Structure: Theory and History*. MIT Press, Cambridge. 29
- 35 **Swann, G.M.P.** (2002). "The functional form of network effects". *Information Economics and Policy* 14, 30
- 36 417–429. 31
- 37 **Taylor, C.** (2003). "Supplier surfing: Competition and consumer behavior in subscription markets". *RAND* 31
- 38 *Journal of Economics* 34, 223–246. 32
- 39 **Thompson, G.V.** (1954). "Intercompany technical standardization in the early American automobile industry". 33
- 40 *The Journal of Economic History* 14, 1–20. 34
- 41 **Thum, M.** (1994). "Network externalities, technological progress, and the competition of market contracts". 35
- 42 *International Journal of Industrial Organization* 12, 269–289. 35
- 43 **Tivig, T.** (1996). "Exchange rate pass-through in two-period duopoly". *International Journal of Industrial* 36
- 44 *Organization* 14, 631–645. 37
- 45 **To, T.** (1994). "Export subsidies and oligopoly with switching costs". *Journal of International Economics* 37, 38
- 46 97–110. 39
- 47 **To, T.** (1995). "Multiperiod competition with switching costs: An overlapping generations formulation". *Jour-* 40
- 48 *nal of Industrial Economics* 44, 81–87. 41
- 49 **Topkis, D.M.** (1978). "Minimizing a submodular function on a lattice". *Operations Research* 26, 305–321. 41
- 50 **Topkis, D.M.** (1998). "Supermodularity and complementarity". In: Kreps, D.M., Sargent, T.J., Klemperer, P. 42
- 51 (Eds.), *Frontiers of Economic Research Series*. Princeton Univ. Press, Princeton. 43

- 1 **Valletti, T.M.** (2000). "Switching costs in vertically related markets". *Review of Industrial Organization* 17, 1
2 395–409. 2
- 3 **Varian, H.** (1980). "A model of sales". *American Economic Review* 70, 651–659. 3
- 4 **Varian, H.R.** (1989). "Price discrimination". In: Schmalensee, R., Willig, R.D. (Eds.), *Handbook of Industrial* 4
5 *Organization*, vol. 1. North-Holland, Amsterdam, pp. 597–654. 4
- 6 **Vettas, N.** (2000). "Investment dynamics in markets with endogenous demand". *Journal of Industrial Eco-* 5
7 *nomics* 48, 189–203. 6
- 8 **Viard, B.V.** (in press). "Do switching costs make markets more or less competitive?: The case of 800-number 7
9 portability". *RAND Journal of Economics*. 8
- 10 **Vickers, J.S.** (2003). "Economics for consumer policy". *British Academy Keynes Lecture*. 9
- 11 **Villas-Boas, M.** (1999). "Dynamic competition with customer recognition". *RAND Journal of Economics* 30, 10
12 604–631. 11
- 13 **Villas-Boas, J.M.** (2006). "Dynamic competition with experience goods". *Journal of Economics and Manage-* 12
14 *ment Strategy* 15, 37–66. 13
- 15 **von Weizsäcker, C.C.** (1984). "The cost of substitution". *Econometrica* 52, 1085–1116. 14
- 16 **Walz, U., Woekener, B.** (2003). "Compatibility standards and strategic trade policy". CEPR Discussion Paper 15
17 #3815. Universities of Frankfurt and Stuttgart. 16
- 18 **Wang, R., Wen, Q.** (1998). "Strategic invasion in markets with switching costs". *Journal of Economics and* 17
19 *Management Strategy* 7, 521–549. 18
- 20 **Waterson, M.** (2003). "The role of consumers in competition and competition policy". *International Journal* 19
21 *of Industrial Organization* 21, 129–150. 20
- 22 **Weiss, M., Sirbu, M.** (1990). "Technological choice in voluntary standards committees: An empirical analy- 21
23 sis". *Economics of Innovation and New Technology* 1, 111–133. 22
- 24 **Werden, G.J.** (2001). "Network effects and conditions of entry: Lessons from the Microsoft case". *Antitrust* 23
25 *Law Journal* 69, 87–111. 24
- 26 **Wernerfelt, B.** (1991). "Brand loyalty and market equilibrium". *Marketing Science* 10, 229–245. 25
- 27 **Whinston, M.D.** (1990). "Tying, foreclosure and exclusion". *American Economic Review* 80, 837–859. 26
- 28 **Whinston, M.D.** (2001). "Exclusivity and tying in US v. Microsoft: What we know, and don't know". *Journal* 27
29 *of Economic Perspectives* 15, 63–80. 28
- 30 **Williamson, O.E.** (1975). *Markets and Hierarchies: Analysis and Anti-trust Implications*. Free Press, New 29
31 York. 30
- 32 **Wilson, C.M.** (2006). "Markets with search and switching costs". Centre for Competition Policy Working 31
33 Paper 06-10. University of East Anglia. 32
- 34 **Witt, U.** (1997). "Lock-in vs. critical masses: Industrial change under network externalities". *International* 33
35 *Journal of Industrial Organization* 15, 753–773. 34
- 36 **Woekener, B.** (1999). "Network effects, compatibility decisions, and monopolization". *Zeitschrift für* 35
37 *Wirtschafts und Sozialwissenschaften* 119, 23–44. 36
- 38 **Yannelis, D.** (2001). "On the simple welfare economics of network externalities". *International Journal of* 37
39 *Social Economics* 28, 344–348. 38
- 40 **Zephirin, M.G.** (1994). "Switching costs in the bank deposit market". *Economic Journal* 104, 455–461. 39
41 40
42 41
43 42
44 43

Proof of Raw Subject Index

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43

Page: 1971

- switching costs(
- network effects(
- compatibility
- economies of scope
- market share
- penetration pricing
- coordination

Page: 1972

- competition for the market
- incompatibility
- bargain-then-ripoff
- network effects(
- switching costs
- “life-cycle” contracts

Page: 1973

- loss leader
- “shopping-cost” markets
- product line
- hold up
- “follow-on” products
- sales

Page: 1974

- switching costs(
- network effects(
- switching costs(

Page: 1975

- market tipping
- consensus standard setting
- splintering
- excess early power
- pronouncements
- penetration prices
- excess inertia
- excess momentum
- QWERTY keyboard

Page: 1976

- excess power
- compatible products
- network effects
- consumer protection

Page: 1977

- competition policy
- compatibility, *see* network effects
- network effects(
- switching costs!types of(
- learning costs
- transactional costs
- contractual costs
- “frequent-flyer” programs
- loyalty contracts

Page: 1978

- search costs
- experience-goods(
- experience-goods(
- “follow on” goods
- aftermarkets
- experience goods

Page: 1979

- loss leaders
- shopping costs
- lifecycle pricing(
- lifecycle pricing(
- switching costs!types of(
- competition policy

Page: 1980

- switching costs!empirical evidence(
- demand inertia

Page: 1981

- brand loyalty, *see* switching costs
- switching costs!empirical evidence(
- lifecycle pricing!examples of(

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43

1	lifecycle pricing!2 period modell(		1
2	<hr/>	Page: 1989	2
3	Page: 1982	product differentiation	3
4	introductory offers	price discrimination!pricing	4
5	penetration pricing	<hr/>	5
6	switching costs	Page: 1990	6
7	lifecycle pricing!inefficiency(	product differentiation!)	7
8	<hr/>	<hr/>	8
9	Page: 1983	Page: 1991	9
10	contracting difficulties	price discrimination!(	10
11	lifecycle pricing!examples of)	price discrimination!and switching(	11
12	lifecycle pricing!inefficiency)	<hr/>	12
13	lifecycle pricing!2 period modell)	Page: 1992	13
14	price discrimination	price discrimination!and switching!)	14
15	<hr/>	contractual costs!(	15
16	Page: 1984	contractual costs!)	16
17	“follow on” goods	<hr/>	17
18	free-entry model	Page: 1993	18
19	price discrimination!firm specialization	switching costs!and efficiency!(	19
20	sales!and leaving costs	price discrimination!)	20
21	price discrimination!free-entry model	<hr/>	21
22	<hr/>	Page: 1994	22
23	Page: 1985	learning costs	23
24	sales!and learning costs	switching costs!and efficiency!)	24
25	sales	shopping costs	25
26	sales	loss leaders	26
27	no sales equilibrium!(	<hr/>	27
28	<hr/>	Page: 1995	28
29	Page: 1986	“mix-and-match” models	29
30	switching costs!and profitability!(	<hr/>	30
31	no sales equilibrium!dynamics!(	Page: 1996	31
32	no sales equilibrium!profitability!(	bundling	32
33	market tipping!and entering costs!(	market share!competition for!(	33
34	switching costs!and profitability	<hr/>	34
35	price discrimination!profitability	Page: 1997	35
36	<hr/>	penetration pricing	36
37	Page: 1987	<hr/>	37
38	no sales equilibrium!dynamics!)	Page: 1998	38
39	market tipping!and entering costs!)	search costs	39
40	no sales equilibrium!profitability!(	market share!competition for!)	40
41	switching costs!and profitability	entry!and switching costs!(	41
42	price discrimination!profitability	switching costs!and entry!(	42
43	<hr/>	<hr/>	43
	Page: 1988	Page: 2001	
	no sales equilibrium!profitability!)	contractual costs	
	no sales equilibrium!)	technological choice	
	switching costs!and profitability!)	entry!and switching costs!)	
	price discrimination!pricing	switching costs!and entry!)	
	lock-in, <i>see</i> switching costs		
	product differentiation!(

1	switching costs!endogenous!(		1
2	price-path		2
3			3
4	Page: 2002		4
5	converters		5
6			6
7	Page: 2003		7
8	“mix-and-match” models		8
9			9
10	Page: 2004		10
11	exclusionary contracts		11
12			12
13	Page: 2005		13
14	liquidated damages		14
15	switching costs!endogenous!)		15
16	switching costs!policy!(		16
17	predatory pricing		17
18			18
19	Page: 2006		19
20	intellectual property rights		20
21	switching costs!policy!)		21
22	switching costs!)		22
23			23
24	Page: 2007		24
25	network effects!(		25
26	network effects!types!(		26
27	total effect		27
28	marginal effect		28
29	network effects!classic!(		29
30	thicker markets		30
31	network effects!classic!)		31
32	network effects!indirect!(		32
33	indirect network effects		33
34	network effects!indirect!)		34
35	economies of scale		35
36			36
37	Page: 2008		37
38	complements to a “platform”		38
39	hardware–software paradigm		39
40			40
41	Page: 2009		41
42	network effects!types!)		42
43	network effects!empirical evidence!(		43
	telecommunications		
	interconnection		
	multi-homing		

		Page: 2010	
		AM stereo standards	
		modern standards	
		backward compatible	
		high-definition television standards	
		Microsoft	
		operating systems	
		applications barrier to entry	
		Page: 2011	
		computers	
		Wintel	
		IBM	
		credit cards	
		QWERTY keyboard!)	
		Page: 2012	
		keyboard designs	
		Dvorak	
		Page: 2013	
		gradual switch	
		coordinated switch	
		QWERTY keyboard!)	
		VCR!)	
		VCR	
		VCR	
		Page: 2014	
		preannouncement	
		VCR!)	
		languages	
		standardization	
		Page: 2015	
		liquidity	
		network effects!econometric approaches!(
		path dependence	
		hedonic approach	
		Page: 2016	
		advertise	
		network effects!econometric approaches!)	
		network effects!empirical evidence!)	
		network effects!underadoption!(

1	<hr/>	self-sustaining equilibrial(clumsy solutions	1
2	Page: 2017		2
3	network effects!strong	<hr/>	3
4	<hr/>	Page: 2025	4
5	Page: 2018	industrialization	5
6	chicken-and-egg problem	sunspot equilibria	6
7	<hr/>	cheap talk	7
8	Page: 2019	entrepreneur	8
9	network effects!total and marginal effects(increasing externalities	maximal equilibrium	9
10	supermodularity	maximal equilibrium	10
11	network effects!total and marginal effects)	death spiral	11
12	<hr/>	subsidies	12
13	Page: 2020	<hr/>	13
14	network effects!underadoption)	Page: 2026	14
15	network effects!and externalities(network externalities(pecuniary network effects	self-sustaining equilibrial)	15
16	<hr/>	cheap talk	16
17	Page: 2021	consensus standards	17
18	side payments	splintered equilibria	18
19	network effects!and externalities)	Battle of the Sexes	19
20	network externalities)	vested interest	20
21	network effects!coordination problems(coordination!with network effects)	<hr/>	21
22	<hr/>	Page: 2027	22
23	Page: 2022	war of attrition	23
24	multiple adoption equilibria	committee standardization	24
25	confusion	“bandwagon” standardization	25
26	splintered equilibrial(splintering	hybrid mechanism	26
27	<hr/>	sequential adoption	27
28	Page: 2023	Duverger’s Law	28
29	coalition-proof	<hr/>	29
30	common knowledge of plans	Page: 2028	30
31	coordination!leadership	bandwagon	31
32	consensus standards	leadership	32
33	quadrasonic sound	network effects!coordination problems)	33
34	fax	coordination!with network effects)	34
35	modem	early adoption(network effects!adoption inertial(inertia!with network effects)	35
36	<hr/>	<hr/>	36
37	Page: 2024	Page: 2029	37
38	Unix	excess inertia	38
39	economies of scale	“horses” problem	39
40	splintered equilibrial)	“penguins” problem	40
41	coordination breakdowns	<hr/>	41
42	wait to see	Page: 2030	42
43	coordination!wrong equilibrium	excess momentum	43
		network effects!sequential adoption(free-rider problem	
		critical mass	
		herding	

1			1
2	Page: 2031	Page: 2037	2
3	splintering	bargain-then-ripoff	3
4	backward induction	open networks(licensing	4
5	multiple equilibria	open networks)	5
6	coordination!delays(coordination!delays)	monopoly price!with network effects(Coase-conjecture	6
7			7
8	Page: 2032		8
9	network effects!sequential adoption(entry!with network effects(network effects!entry(multihoming(exclusive dealing multihoming)	Page: 2038	9
10		deadweight loss	10
11		multiple equilibria	11
12		catastrophe theory	12
13		critical mass	13
14		monopoly price!with network effects(network effects!commitment strategies! influential adopters	14
15	Page: 2033		15
16	pivotal adopters'		16
17	consensus standards	Page: 2039	17
18	biodiversity	reputation effects(integration reputation effects)	18
19	mix-and-match	multiple equilibria	19
20	entry!with network effects(network effects!entry)	network effects!commitment strategies)	20
21	network effects!early power(excess early power	contingent contracts	21
22			22
23			23
24	Page: 2034	Page: 2040	24
25	New Hampshire Theorem	cooperative game theory	25
26	network effects!early power)		26
27	market tipping(instability	Page: 2041	27
28	lock-in	contract theory	28
29	tipping, <i>see</i> market tipping	sponsored pricing	29
30	early adoption)	network competition(pivotal customers expectations track surplus	30
31			31
32	Page: 2035		32
33	market tipping)	Page: 2042	33
34	option value	expectations track quality history	34
35			35
36	Page: 2036	Page: 2043	36
37	pre-emption	ten times better	37
38	network effects!adoption inertial)	competition!with network effects(network effects!pricing with competition)	38
39	inertia!with network effects)		39
40	pricing!with network effects(network effects!pricing)		40
41	penetration pricing	Page: 2044	41
42	Ramsey pricing	unsponsored standards(feed-through unsponsored standards)	42
43	non-linear pricing		43

Proof of Raw Subject Index

1	new-firm bias	institutions!choice ofl(	1
2		side payments	2
3	Page: 2045	consensus standard	3
4	early adopters		4
5	excess early power	Page: 2050	5
6	switching costsl(	converter	6
7	life-cycle costs	intellectual property	7
8	switching costsl)		8
9	Page: 2046	Page: 2051	9
10	niches	converters	10
11	competition!with network effectsl)	adapters	11
12	network effects!pricing with competitionl)	multi-homing	12
13	pricing!with network effectsl)	international trade	13
14	network effects!pricingl)	television	14
15	network competitionl)	network effects!choosing how to competel)	15
16	Page: 2047	institutions!choice ofl)	16
17	market tippingl(	Page: 2052	17
18	market tippingl)	anti-trust!network effectsl(	18
19	network effects!choosing how to competel(	predationl(	19
20	leveling	network effects!policyl(	20
21		splinteringl(	21
22	Page: 2048	splinteringl)	22
23	installed base	preannouncements	23
24	telephone competition		24
25	instant messaging	Page: 2053	25
26	interline agreements	consensus standards	26
27	market tippingl(	predationl)	27
28	horizontal deffectation!and network effectsl(		28
29	horizontal deffectation!and network effectsl)	Page: 2055	29
30	market tippingl)	interconnection	30
31	mix-and-match	standards, <i>see</i> network effects	31
32	modularity	anti-trust!network effectsl)	32
33	Page: 2049	network effectsl)	33
34		network effects!policyl)	34
35			35
36			36
37			37
38			38
39			39
40			40
41			41
42			42
43			43